## PERFORMANCE MEASUREMENT FOR THE DEVELOPMENT OF EMERGING SMART CITIES: THE CASE OF SRI LANKA

Aravindi Lavanya Samarakkody

(198002 F)

Thesis submitted in partial fulfilment of the requirements of the requirements for the degree Master of Science by Research

Department of Building Economics

University of Moratuwa Sri Lanka

May 2020

#### DECLARATION

#### Declaration, Copyright Statement and the Statement of the Supervisor

I declare that this is my own work and this thesis does not incorporate without acknowledgement any material previously submitted for a Degree or Diploma in any other University or institute of higher learning and to the best of my knowledge and belief it does not contain any material previously published or written by another person except where the acknowledgement is made in the text.

Also, I hereby grant to University of Moratuwa the non-exclusive right to reproduce and distribute my thesis, in whole or in part in print, electronic or other medium. I retain the right to use this content in whole or part in future works (such as articles or books).

fraich .

02.07.2020 Date

Signature of the student (Samarakkody A.L.)

The above candidate has carried out research for the Masters thesis under my supervision.

Clement

Signature of the Supervisor (Dr. Udayangani Kulatunga)

Bord

Signature of the Supervisor (Dr. H.M.N. Dilum Bandara)

02.07.2020 Date

02.07.2020

Date

## DEDICATION

To my parents and Gayan

#### ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

This research wouldn't have been a success without guidance and help of numerous people. I take this opportunity to express my sincere gratitude to all of them for their valuable time and support.

First and foremost, I would like to express my deepest gratitude to my supervisors Dr. Udayangani Kulatunga and Dr. H.M.N. Dilum Bandara for the priceless guidance, assistance and encouragement provided to me throughout the research. I am greatly indebted to them for their great mentoring and advices throughout the research journey.

Further, I extend my heartiest gratitude to all the staff members of the Department of Building Economics, University of Moratuwa for their immense assistance which has always been the source of strength to enhance my research potential. It is my duty to pay gratitude to all the academics including my external experts and those who have conducted research workshops.

My grateful acknowledgment is made to all the professionals in the industry who contributed to this study by sparing their immeasurable time for data collection and for sharing their valuable knowledge despite their busy schedules. Specially, my sincere thanks delivered to Mr. Amila Cabral and Mr. Isuru Biyanwela for their kind support.

I also wish to extend my sincere appreciation to Senate Research Committee of University of Moratuwa for providing funding to undertake this research under the grant number SRC/LT/2018 & SRC/MT/2018.

Last but not least, I express my heartfelt gratitude to my beloved parents, fiancé, brother and friends for willingly giving me their utmost support, advice and continuously motivating me to carry out the work successfully.

Samarakkody A. L.

May 2020

#### ABSTRACT

Performance of a Smart City can be measured in terms of the smartness which in turn is defined by means of smart characteristics. Suitable smart characteristics for a particular context can be identified by means of performance measures and the Performance Measurement System prepared as such, can provide means for the emerge of Smart Cities in that context. Thus, this research aims at enhancing the emerging city development projects in Sri Lanka through an appropriate and holistic Smart City Performance Measurement Systems. The objectives of this study were accomplished with a mixed method approach and data were collected through preliminary interviews, case study interviews and questionnaire surveys. Findings were analysed with content analysis using cognitive maps and with statistical analysis using Battelle scoring approach.

As the major findings of this study, a list of Performance Measures for Smart Cities from literature, the appropriate list of Performance Measures for the proposed Smart City project in Colombo Port City and a scoring system as part of the Performance Measurement System for a Sri Lankan Smart City context are produced. The Performance Measurement System includes the themes Smart Mobility, Smart People, Smart Environment, Smart Living, Smart Economy and Smart Governance, embedded in critical success factors in a Smart City project and shows interrelationships between themes. Findings revealed that availability of ICT infrastructure as the most significant Performance Measure while the Smart Mobility was the most significant theme in the scoring system. The researchers in designing the Performance Measurement System have given an equal importance to Smart People theme as well. Additionally, the reasons to proceed with emerging Smart City development projects, barriers to proceed with the developed Performance Measurement System to Smart Cities in Sri Lanka and the recommended solutions to overcome the barriers are discussed.

**Key words:** Performance Measurement System, Performance Measures, Scoring System, Smart Cities, Sri Lanka

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

DECLARATION	i
DEDICATION	ii
ACKNOWLEDGEMENT	iii
ABSTRACT	iv
TABLE OF CONTENTS	v
LIST OF FIGURES	xi
LIST OF TABLES	xiii
ABBREVIATIONS	xiv
CHAPTER 01	15
INTRODUCTION	15
1.1 Background	15
1.2 Problem Statement	20
1.3 Aim and Objectives	21
1.4 Scope and Limitations	21
1.5 Research Methodology	22
1.6 Chapter Breakdown	22
1.6.1 Chapter One: Introduction	22
1.6.2 Chapter Two: Literature Review	23
1.6.3 Chapter Three: Research Methodology	23
1.6.4 Chapter Four: Research Analysis and Findings	23
1.6.5 Chapter Five: Conclusion and Recommendations	23
CHAPTER 02	24
LITERATURE REVIEW	24
2.1 Introduction	24

2.2 Smart Cities
2.2.1 Evolvement of "Smart Cities" as a response to opportunities and challenges of urbanization and city growth
2.2.2 Definitions of "Smart Cities"25
2.3 Characteristics of Smart Cities
2.3.1 Elements of recent Smart City definitions
2.3.2 Comparison of city conceptualisations with Smart City initiatives
2.4 Performance Measurement
2.4.1 Key concepts in measuring performance
2.4.2 Performance Measurement in cities
2.4.3 Performance Measurement in Smart City development
2.5 Importance of Performance Measurement in Smart City Development
2.5.1 Performance management of smart cities
2.5.2 Monitoring and controlling the applications of smart city requirements37
2.5.2 Monitoring and controlling the applications of smart city requirements37 2.5.3 Improved decision making by smart city policymakers and other involved
2.5.3 Improved decision making by smart city policymakers and other involved
2.5.3 Improved decision making by smart city policymakers and other involved parties
<ul> <li>2.5.3 Improved decision making by smart city policymakers and other involved parties</li> <li>2.5.4 Accountability of smart city administration</li></ul>
2.5.3 Improved decision making by smart city policymakers and other involved parties
2.5.3 Improved decision making by smart city policymakers and other involved parties
2.5.3 Improved decision making by smart city policymakers and other involved parties
2.5.3 Improved decision making by smart city policymakers and other involved parties
2.5.3 Improved decision making by smart city policymakers and other involved parties
2.5.3 Improved decision making by smart city policymakers and other involved parties         38         2.5.4 Accountability of smart city administration         38         2.5.5 Strengthened local democratic institutions         38         2.5.6 Supported strategic planning and target setting for smart cities         38         2.5.7 Improved communication among smart city project participants         39         2.5.8 Continuous improvement of smart cities         39         2.5.9 Overall success of the smart city         39         2.5.10 Funding/ budgeting on smart cities

Case study design73
3.2.5 Time horizons
3.2.6 Techniques and procedures
3.3 Data analysis
3.4 Research Process
3.5 Summary
CHAPTER 04
DATA ANALYSIS80
4.1 Introduction
4.2 Case Study Description
4.3 Importance of implementing a Performance Measurement System to Sr Lankan Smart Cities
4.4 Suitability of the listed Performance Measures (from literature) to SMCPC9
4.4.1 Smart Economy
4.4.2 Smart People98
4.4.3 Smart Living101
4.4.4 Smart Governance
4.4.5 Smart Environment110
4.4.6 Smart Mobility113
4.5 Suitability of the listed Performance Measures of SMCPC to general Sr Lankan context
4.5.1 Ranking of the themes
4.5.2 Allocation of scores to sub-themes within the main themes
4.5.3 Allocation of scores to indicators within the sub-themes
4.6 Barriers to implement a Performance Measurement System to SMCPC
Findings from preliminary interviews (Stage 1)143

4.7 Solutions to the identified barriers: Findings from Case Study (Stage 2)147
4.7.1 Making Performance Measurement relevant
4.7.2 Prioritizing
4.7.3 Using right performance measures
4.7.4 Taking an integrated approach149
4.7.5 Improving transparency149
4.7.6 Adhering to appropriate codes of ethics
4.7.7 Adopting agile practices150
4.8 Discussion on the case study and preliminary interview findings150
4.8.1 Importance of implementing a Performance Measurement System to Sri Lankan Smart Cities
4.8.2 Barriers to implement a Performance Measurement System to SMCPC 152
4.8.3 Solutions to the identified barriers154
4.8.4 The Suitable List of Performance Measures for the SMCPC156
4.9 Summary
CHAPTER 05161
CONCLUSIONS AND RECOMMENDATIONS
5.1 Introduction
5.2 Conclusions under the research objectives
5.2.1 Objective 1: To investigate the characteristics of Smart Cities globally and with particular reference to Sri Lanka
5.2.2 Objective 2: To investigate the importance of Performance Measurement in Smart City development
5.2.3 Objective 3: To synthesize different Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities

5.2.4 Objective 4: To identify the barriers to implement a Performance
Measurement System to Sri Lanka and recommended solutions to overcome the
barriers164
5.2.5 Objective 5: To develop a Performance Measurement System for Smart
Cities in Sri Lanka165
5.3 Recommendations166
5.3.1 Develop a Smart City policy166
5.3.2 Maintaining databases166
5.3.3 Infrastructure development
5.3.4 University and organisational level awareness programs167
5.3.5 Focus on nature based/ green infrastructure and provisions for disaster
resilience167
5.4 Limitations167
5.5 Further research
ANNEXURES170
APPENDIX A -PRELIMINARY INTRVIEW GUIDELINE198
APPENDIX B –CASE STUDY INTRVIEW GUIDELINE
APPENDIX C – QUESTIONNAIRE

## LIST OF FIGURES

Figure 2.1: Key terms of Smart Citiespage
33
Figure 2.2: Performance Management Processpage
37
Figure 2.3: Steps to obtain a competitive advantage through benchmarkingpage
40
Figure 2.4: Themes and sub-themes for Performance Measurement in Smart
Citiespage 47
Figure 3.1: Saunders, Lewis, and Thornhill (2019)'s Research Onionpage 67
Figure 3.2: Rate of Response for the Questionnaire Surveypage
79
Figure 3.3: Type of the organisations the respondents of the Questionnaire Survey
representedpage 79
Figure 3.4: Research Process of the studypage 83
Figure 4.1: Bird eye view of the Colombo Port City Projectpage
86
Figure 4.2: Cognitive map on the importance of implementing a Performance
Measurement System to Sri Lankan Smart Citiespage
88
Figure 4.3: Development process of the Performance Measurement System for
SMCPCpage 91
Figure 4.4: Modifications for the listed Performance Measures under Smart Economy
thempage 92
Figure 4.5: Modifications for the listed Performance Measures under Smart People
themepage
98
Figure 4.6: Modifications for the listed Performance Measures under Smart Living
themepage 101

Figure 4.7: Modifications for the listed Performance Measures under Smart
Governance thempage 106
Figure 4.8: Modifications for the listed Performance Measures under Smart
Environment themepage
110
Figure 4.9: Modifications for the listed Performance Measures under Smart Mobility
themepage
113
Figure 4.10: Performance Measurement System suitable for Sri Lankan Smart
Citiespage 116
Figure 4.11: A snap shot of questionnaire survey results- mean score
calculationpage
120
Figure 4.12: Development of the Scoring System to measure the performance of Sri
Lankan Smart Citiespage
121
Figure 4.13: Cognitive map on barriers to implement a Performance Measurement
System to Sri Lankan Smart Citiespage
136

## LIST OF TABLES

Table 2.1: Definitions of Smart Cities generated in diverse institutions in the
societypage 26
Table 2.2: Smart Cities definitional elementpage
29
Table 2.3: Comparison of city conceptualisations with smart-city initiativespage
31
Table 2.4: Content Dimensions in Performance Measurement Systems for Smart
Citiespage 42
Table 2.5: A Comprehensive list of Performance Measures for Smart Cities from
literaturepage 49
Table 2.6: Different forms under which the indicators were classified in Performance
Measurement System from literaturepage
58
Table 2.7: Different types of performance indicatorspage
59
Table 3.1: Profiles of the respondents for expert interviewspage
76
Table 3.2: Years of experience of the respondents involved in the Questionnaire
Surveypage 80
Table 4.1: Performance Measures suitable for Sri Lankan Smart Citiespage
117
Table 4.2: Scoring of themespage
121
Table 4.3: Scoring of sub-themes within the themespage
123
Table 4.4: Scoring of indicators within sub-themespage 125

## ABBREVIATIONS

API	Application Programming Interface
CPC	Colombo Port City
EMC	Estate Management Company
ICT	Information and Communication Technology
SMCPC	Smart City Project in Colombo Port City
	Application Programming Interface

#### CHAPTER 01

#### **INTRODUCTION**

#### **1.1 Background**

According to the United Nations, it is expected that 60% of the world's population will live in urban areas by 2030 (United Nations, 2018). The growing urban population poses broad challenges across domains such as utilities, energy, transportation, health, safety and environment to contemporary cities (Psyllidis, Bozzon, Bocconi, & Bolivar, 2015). Correspondingly, these challenges create complex pressures on the aforementioned domains and several others such as education, public services, waste management, etc. (Caird, 2017). Such pressures urge the need of innovative arrangements which on the other hand become pressing invitations to make cities more intelligent in terms of sustainability, productivity, transparency, effectiveness and efficiency (Gil-Garcia, Pardo, & Nam, 2015). With that arouse a reorientation of city conceptions towards a more economical, environment friendly and provident setting (Anttiroiko, Valkama, & Bailey, 2014). Consequently, cities have turned in to intelligent cities (Komninos, 2019), Smart Cities (Galati, 2018), digital cities (Caragliu, Del Bo, & Nijkamp, 2011), sustainable cities (Elgazzar & El-Gazzar, 2017), etc. These urban metaphors, as conceptual variants to each other, are reciprocally connected with partially overlapping definitions (Nam and Pardo, 2011). Out of them, adopting a "smart" approach via Smart Cities is a widely regarded phenomenon that emerged aiming the mitigation of the aforementioned challenges (Albino, Berardi, & Dangelic, 2015; Chourabi, Nam, Gil-Garcia, Mellouli, Nahon, Pardo, & Scholl, 2015; Dameri, 2017; Yigitcanlar, Kamruzzaman, Buys, Ioppolo, Sabatini-Marques, da Costa, & Yun, 2018).

#### What are Smart Cities?

The concept of Smart Cities, although proliferating in discussions, is difficult to delineate (Orlowski & Romanowska, 2019). In fact, a consensus was neither reached by the practice communities nor researchers (Gil-Garcia et al., 2015). Previous researchers identified that some of the existing, narrowed definitions for Smart Cities

as marketing solutions for different city level issues; rest of the definitions of Smart Cities varies with the researchers' interest (Orlowski & Romanowska, 2019). This requires researchers to use caution when selecting and adopting a definition for Smart Cities. However, definitional elements the authors spotlight can be identified as the themes with which they exhibit Smart Cities concept as an approach to overcome the problems occurred in basic cities (Yigitcanlar et al., 2018).

While Smart City concept is still evolving (Tomar & Gupta, 2019), most recently developed Smart City definitions include elements such as; all means of innovations in the urban atmosphere (Information and Communication Technology [ICT] - based yet not necessarily) that purpose to improve the city dimensions including economy, people, government, mobility, environment and living (Anthopoulos, Janssen, & Weerakkody, 2019); upgraded quality of life, sustainable urban environment, use of modern advanced ICT, public government openness, encouraged community participation, effective management of traffic and public transport, intelligent device control, optimum utilization of resource, improved environmental protection and improved public services (Xie, Tang, Huang, Yu, Xie, Liu, & Liu et al., 2019).

In addition to that elements like, Complex information, computation and communication systems, critical infrastructure management (Abbas, Shaheen, & Amin, 2019); living solution, integrates different facilities and improve the services for citizens, typify the importance in sustainability of resources and applications for next generations (Samih, 2019); mutual concessions between modern technology and natives' methods (Tomar & Gupta, 2019); Well-being and satisfaction of citizen, Building Information Modelling (BIM) acts as a catalyst to the development of Smart Cities, increasing number of documentations including specifications, reports and guidance (Heaton & Parlikad, 2019) were also highlighted.

#### Importance and advantages of Performance Measurement in Smart Cities

In order to fulfill the requirements of a Smart City it is important to benchmark appropriate Smart City "characteristics". This implies the need of accurate benchmarks; that can be used in setting city goals and determining priorities (Harms, 2016). Benchmarking would provide a clear basis for the famous maxim, "whatever is measured will only get done" (Behn, 2003) and lack of this would give negative impacts on determining city goals and requirements (Brorström, Argento, Grossi, Thomasson, & Almqvist, 2018). Out of various definitions, mostly cited includes the definition given by Harbour (2017) which refers performance measures as a numerical expression of the extent to which a desired outcome has been or is being achieved. Benchmarking, which involves the basic steps of Performance Measurement, establishes gaps in performance whereby ensures an action plan is put in place to narrow the identified gaps and measured to verify.

In fact, as per Fredrick W. Taylor's management by exception principle, attempts to control every aspect resulting in controlling of nothing; remarks one of the most popular aphorisms in Performance Measurement (Shafritz, Borick, Russell, & Hyde, 2016). Therefore, planning, controlling and decision making regarding defining and redefining of the priorities and solutions in a Smart City and resource allocation, assigning responsibilities, etc. can be achieved with proper Performance Measurement (Merli & Bonollo, 2014). Performance Measurement System is a set of metrics that is used to quantify how optimally the resources are utilized to provide a desired level of customer satisfaction and the extent to which requirements of the customer are met (Neely, Gregory, & Platts, 2005). Consequently, by developing a Performance Measurement System, not only goal benchmarking but also goal alignment with improved accountability in complex and large city projects is enhanced (Brorström et al., 2018). Peroformance Measurement and benchmarking together with ranking allows identifying and comparing strengths and weaknesses in a Smart City (Carli, Dotolia, Pellegrino, & Ranieri, 2013). Furthermore, modifications to development in smart programmes to enhance smartness can be done through Performance Measurement (Afonso, Brito, Nascimento, Gracia, & Álvaro, 2015). In addition to that, a transparent and common Performance Measurement System is important in creating trust in solutions in Smart Cities and also to monitor the progress of them (Huovila, Airaksinen, Pinto-Seppä, Piira, Bosch, Penttinen, & Kontinakis, 2017). All in all, managers of public agencies including cities use Performance Measurement for performance evaluation, to control the

behavior in civic engagement, for budgeting, promoting, motivating, celebrating success, learning and improving (Behn, 2003).

### Importance of selecting a unique Performance Measurement System depending on the context

As far as the Performance Measurement in Smart Cities is concerned, development of various measurement indices and methods of a particular Smart City took the form of the desired definitional elements of that Smart City (Albino et al., 2015). As a result, while some authors believe that Performance Measurement assessment need to be tailor made to the vision of that city (Albino et al., 2015), some others, conversely, reckon that the assessment should be based on a shared Smart City definition and at the same time be flexible to adapt and address the city's specific goals (Dameri, 2017). This was supported by Tommar and Gupta (2019) remarking an important era in the evolvement of Smart City concept, by showing the inessentiality to compromise the identity of an existing city/ culture when building a city. Yet, a typical Smart City would have a suitable and an adequate Performance Measurement System (Merli & Bonollo, 2014). The adequacy of the performance system can be determined with the city context (Lee, Hancock, & Hu, 2014). Therefore, in order to contrive comprehensive Performance Measurement, appraising the context is important (Behn, 2003). As a result, measuring the performance of a Smart City largely depends on the local content of the selected metropolitan area (Dameri, 2015). While various researchers have attempted to evaluate Smart City from the lens of performance and competitiveness (Anthopoulos et al., 2019), it is worthwhile to consider Performance Measurement to Sri Lanka. While a pick up on Smart Cities and its smartness quality concerns in Sri Lanka is observable (De Silva, 2017) the need aroused regarding Performance Measurement is not acknowledged yet.

#### Level of acknowledgement in Smart Cities in Sri Lanka

"Smart City" is the newest lexicon that is used to hype urban planning in Sri Lanka (De Zoysa, 2017). The complex pressures on urban services created by population explosion requires smart arrangement for Colombo as well (Johansson & Emmanuel, 2006). As per De Silva (2017), quality concerns related to smartness such as robust ICT digitization and connectivity, real time information and management, smart mobility/ parking, clean potable water, smart building, affordable housing, green environment, smart power grids, Smart City maintenance, smart street lighting, smart care, e-governance together with knowledge based innovation driven economy are planned to be incorporated in Sri Lankan flagship Smart City projects. Colombo Port city (CPC) is one such reified flagship project and as a result, significant partnerships were made so as to take up on the aspiration of building the South Asia's premier Smart City project (DailyMirror, 2019). Therefore, the acknowledgement is not in a satisfactory level yet shows potentials.

#### Positivity in Sri Lanka regarding Performance Measurement for Smart Cities

The demand for land due to population growth in Sri Lankan cities has led to the use of marginal lands which are prone to natural disasters, unsuitable for any habitation and not sustainable (Dissanayake, Hettiarachchi, & Siriwardana, 2018). Use of lands in that way created further problems effecting to the long run and therefore innovative arrangements like smart initiatives have emerged (Johansson & Emmanuel, 2006). Meanwhile for Performance Measurement in quality assurance concerns, a positive environment was created with the applications of Sri Lanka Standards (SLS) and International Organization for Standardization (ISO) standards specifically in respect of smart community infrastructure, smart transport infrastructure, etc. benchmarking the quality with other cities around the world, consistently tracking, reporting and improving the indicators (De Silva, 2017). In fact, CPC has already received the ISO 9001: 2015 certification for the Quality Management System (QMS), adopted by the project company (The Island, 2019). Therefore, introducing a fit-for-purpose Performance Measurement System for Sri Lankan Smart Cities which can integrate the aforementioned existing developments and local requirements is necessitating.

#### **1.2 Problem Statement**

According to Lombardi et al. (2012), cities become complex systems because of the unpredictable interrelations of its individuals. Regardless the volatility of the system and intricacy to study it due to its own complexity as a system, measuring the performance of a city with a distinctive set of indicators that can represent the city context and compare it with other countries has become an intensifying requirement in order to evaluate the efficiency levels in nurturing the city (Mavrič & Bobek, 2015).

Meanwhile, the cities tend to adopt smart strategies to deal with the challenges occur due to the immigration and population growth and resulted in constraints related to services provision (Brorström et al., 2018). Therefore, as Smart Cities are built to overcome such challenges with their own characteristics, it is worthwhile to measure if those Smart City characteristics are actually achieved as desired with an appropriate Performance Measurement System (Merli & Bonollo, 2014). In fact, such Smart City characteristics are elusive while the concept is still maturing result in confusions in designing the Smart City requirements in the basic stage which can only be done with accurate Performance Measurement (Harms, 2016). On the other hand, if Performance Measurement is not carried out for Smart City development, defining and measuring smartness performance is strenuous where a shared definition or an outline for smart characteristics are not to be found (Dameri, 2017).

Within the context of Sri Lanka, there is a tendency for Smart City development (De Zoysa, 2017). In fact, the Port City project in Colombo is built on the latest Smart City concepts (CHEC Port City Colombo (Pvt) Ltd, 2019). As argued by Brorström et al. (2018) it is beneficial to have a clear idea of Smart City parameters and objectives from the outset of a project to enable them to be achieved going forward. Therefore, it is important to consider Performance Measurement of Smart City in Sri Lanka as defining smart characteristics with a scientific base, measuring and controlling them is still an industry/project need. Although existing studies can be taken as a guide in preparing a performance system for Sri Lanka, a bespoke Performance Measurement System that reflects the context of Sri Lanka is yet to be

developed. Therefore, a literature gap can also be identified in the Performance Measurement perspective in Sri Lankan Smart Cities.

#### 1.3 Aim and Objectives

The aim of this research is to enhance the emerging Smart City development projects in Sri Lanka through an appropriate and holistic Smart City Performance Measurement Systems.

Following objectives will be achieved to reach the above research aim.

- 1. To investigate the characteristics of Smart Cities globally and with particular reference to Sri Lanka.
- 2. To investigate the importance of Performance Measurement in Smart City development.
- 3. To synthesise different Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities.
- To identify the barriers to implement a Performance Measurement System to Sri Lanka and solutions to overcome the barriers.
- 5. To develop a Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities in Sri Lanka.

#### **1.4 Scope and Limitations**

Smart City in Colombo Port City (SMCPC) is a unique Smart City experience for the Sri Lankan construction industry, therefore there's a case to study. However, finalizing of project objectives is in the process. These objectives are subjected to changes with the project evolvement as well as because of the changes of governments. While smart characteristics needs to be in line with the project objectives, the scope will only be limited to the project objectives as at the time period the interviews were carried out. Due to the confidentiality, interviews were conducted with the professionals directly engaged in the project and they were only willing to reveal the qualitative data (which does not include numbers). Therefore this research is limited to such data and the smartness requirements that comes in regulatory requirements (the updated version as at October, 2019).

#### 1.5 Research Methodology

As an initial step in determining the administered research methodology for this study, the research problem was properly established, followed by a comprehensive literature review and a preliminary round of interviews to obtain the expert opinion. The literature review mainly encompasses an analysis on Smart Cities, Performance Measurement, the importance of Performance Measurement in Smart City development, Performance Measurement Systems in Smart Cities, Smart Characteristics and Smart Indicators/ Performance indicators; globally and with particular reference to Sri Lanka. Interviews were conducted to understand the Sri Lankan context, specifically with reference to the SMCPC.

Having the research problem established as aforementioned, adopted approach was structured under a research methodological design. Considering the comprehensive organization. "research philosophy; approach for theory development; methodological choice; strategy (ies); time horizon; and techniques and procedures" are identified by adhering to Saunders, Lewis, and Thornhill's (2019) research onion. Accordingly this study was positioned within the philosohpical stance of pragmatism by undertaking an abductive approach. Thus the methodological choice adopted was mixed method while data was collected by conducting a case study and a questionnaire survey. Therefore, the strategies are (single) case study and survey data collection techniques and procedures include expert interviews and questionnaire survey. The collected qualitative data were analysed with manual content analysis whilst the quantitative data was analysed with Battelle method paired with mean score method. Thereafter the results were validated with pattern matching. A detailed further review on research methodology is presented in Chapter 3.

#### **1.6 Chapter Breakdown**

#### **1.6.1 Chapter One: Introduction**

Chapter one brings in a detailed background to approach the research problem, aims, objectives, methodology, scope and limitations and includes the structure of the report.

#### **1.6.2 Chapter Two: Literature Review**

Chapter two presents a comprehensive literature review on the theoretical basis of Performance Measurement in Smart Cities with the identification of the existing Performance Measurement.

#### 1.6.3 Chapter Three: Research Methodology

Chapter three will explain the research methodology with particular reference to each layer of "Saunders et al. (2019)'s Research Onion".

#### 1.6.4 Chapter Four: Research Analysis and Findings

Chapter four presents the ultimate findings and discusses the analysed data in Sri Lankan context with the literature findings.

#### **1.6.5 Chapter Five: Conclusion and Recommendations**

Chapter five of this study concludes research findings providing recommendations. Finally, it directs to the further research areas as well.

#### **CHAPTER 02**

#### LITERATURE REVIEW

#### 2.1 Introduction

This chapter comprises of evaluative reporting on the study area of Performance Measurement in Smart Cities without limiting it to a chronological catalog. Initially Smart Cities and Performance Measurement is introduced and concluded remarking the importance of Performance Measurement in Smart Cities development. In order to carry it through the objectives of the study the characteristics of a Smart City is explained in detail through several approaches. Additionally, the existing Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities are evaluated by adhering to a top down approach where the themes, sub themes and indicators of the selected Performance Measurement Systems are reviewed one after the other.

#### 2.2 Smart Cities

# **2.2.1** Evolvement of "Smart Cities" as a response to opportunities and challenges of urbanization and city growth

Unprecedented urbanization and its subsequent consequence, the expansion of cities in size and number wise, resulted in challenges as well as opportunities for a city (Ojo, Dzhusupova, & Curry, 2015). According to the authors, while the urban population growth can challenge conservative ways of lifestyle and city management, city growth offers opportunities for an optimal city management through sustainable resource managing to cope up with the increasing demand, innovative and creative approaches and integration with the wider world economy.

Smart Cities are one of the latest responses to the challenges occurred due to the distinctive nature of the problems that comes with urbanization and the opportunities come in disguise with the consequent reorientation of city conceptions in an economical, environment oriented, and provident setting (Chourabi et al., 2012). Some of the other reoriented city conceptions include Digital city, Intelligent city,

Ubiquitous city (U-city), Global city, Sustainable cities with which definitions the Smart Cities concept oftentimes overlap (Nam and Pardo, 2011).

However, some authors believe that the original rationale in developing Smart Cities was as a potential panacea to the catastrophic global climate change era and later this rationale was shifted towards easing the negative impacts of ill-urbanizational practices, consumerism and industrialization (Taamallah, Khemaja, & Faiz, 2017). As per Yigitcanlar (2018), Smart City concept now is monocentric towards technology due to two main challenges that Smart City practice is facing to overcome; namely the urge for both global cities and cities falling behind to attract, foster and secure innovations and knowledge generation, and the popularity of unidimensional agendas put forward through the programs of the major technology development and consultancy firms. Whatsoever, Smart Cities obviously give good grounds for expecting the ideal upcoming of an urban settlement where the best-case scenario, incorporates integrated and futuristic strategic plans that can define the vision and policy for the development of a city, just the same way it is seen through the prism of knowledge ecosystems and digital technologies (Angelidou, 2017).

#### 2.2.2 Definitions of "Smart Cities"

The definition of "Smart Cities" is inchoate and vague (Alkandari, Alnasheet, & Alshekhly, 2012; Chourabi et al., 2012; Hollands, 2008; Paskaleva, 2011; Nam and Pardo, 2011; Ojo, et al., 2015; Gil-Garcia et al., 2015). The absence of a commonly accepted interpretation for Smart Cities due to the limited intellectual exchange and divergence among the Smart Cities' researchers has raised concerns of many (Mora, Bolici, & Deakin, 2017). Most of the Smart City definitions are found in scholarly literature with them overlapping only several elements and consequently sharing a common agreement and understanding is impractical (Mora et al., 2017). For an instance, Richter, Kraus, & Syrjä (2015) defines Smart Cities as a city that inherit an interdisciplinary character and therefore integrate city technologies, marketing, knowledge economy, economic geography along with spatial planning (Richter et al., 2015). As per Ojo et al. (2014), Smart Cities can be termed as "urban innovations and transformation initiatives" that aim to utilize ICT/ digital, social and physical

infrastructures and knowledge resources for better city administration and infrastructure management along with economic regeneration and social cohesion (Ojo et al. 2014). Although initial definitions such as definitions given by IBM being a techno firm defines Smart City as the use of ICT to sense, peruse and integrate vital information for the core systems in cities, Smart Cities definitions nowadays tend to define Smart City as an intelligent response to social and city needs (Su, Li, & Fu, 2011). Correspondingly, integrating not only technology but also intelligence to urban space formation and development strategies generation is definitive as per contemporary researches (Vanolo, 2014).

However, Smart City definitions reflect the differing groups that provide the definitions (Dixon, et al., 2017). In a way, collectively the Smart City definitions from different viewpoints depending on the interests of different groups provides a better picture than the popular definitions provided as marketing solutions for numerous city issues or researcher's expertise/ interest areas (Orlowski & Romanowska, 2019). Following Table 2.1 depicts some of the definitions on Smart Cities generated in diverse institutions in the society.

	Definition	Source	
	Cities that intends to improve the quality of life of the citizens	Chen, 2010	
	through supporting the daily life with optimized		
nic	transportation, electrical and other logistical operations		
adem	through the sensor capabilities and communication sewn into the cities' infrastructures.		
Aca	the cities' infrastructures.		
	Cities that encompass a comparatively high share of	Kourtit,	
	knowledge-intensive jobs, highly educated people, output-	Nijkamp, &	
	oriented planning systems, sustainability-oriented initiatives	Steenbruggen,	
	and creative activities that facilitate high productivity	2017	
nt	A place where city services and traditional networks are made	EU, 2016	
Government	much efficient through the use of digital and		
DVeri	telecommunication technologies targeting the ease of city's		
Ŭ	inhabitants and businesses.		

	Definition	Source
	The process/ series of steps by following which cities can	BIS, 2013: 2
	become "liveable" and "resilient" with an enhanced ability to	
	respond to new challenges in a faster way while bringing hard	
	infrastructure, (digital) technologies and social capital	
	(including community institutions and local skills) together to	
	provide an attractive environment for its citizens and to fuel a	
	sustainable economic development.	
	A city that utilize technology to transform the city's core	IBM, 2013
	systems and optimize limited resources which at its highest	
	levels of maturity, is realized as a knowledge-based system	
ogy ies	that provides a real-time understanding to its stakeholders	
Technology companies	while enabling decision-makers towards proactive	
Tec	management of the city's subsystems.	
	A term that denotes the effective integration of factors in the	ISO/IEC,
/ ls	built environment, namely, digital, physical and	2014b: 2
Industry standards	human systems so as to deliver a prosperous, sustainable and	
Indistar	an inclusive future for the citizens live in a Smart City.	

Adopted from; (Dixon, et al., 2017)

Looking collectively at the definitions given through different perspectives allows capturing a holistic picture of the definition of a Smart City. By looking at the definitions it can be seen that the Government, technology companies and industry definitions have put emphasis operationality and on digital technologies while the academic definition is more futuristic. Although the main driver of global interest in Smart Cities differ with the interpreter, the definitions in different lenses when put together a socially inclusive, technologically advanced, efficient and green city is promising. This leaves the need for a collaborative effort by Smart City researchers and policy makers to generate a possible agreement on the Smart City concept (Mora et al., 2017). Nevertheless, the same set of researchers and policy makers are in middling agreements on how Smart Cities are characterized (Neirotti, De Marco, Cagliano, Mangano, & Scorrano, 2014). The definition adopted for this study is based on Ahvenniemi, Huovila, Pinto-Seppä, & Airaksinen (2017), which took a

holistic view at different dimensions of smart cities. Accodingly, Smart Cities are innovative arrangements which were made by integrating critical infrastructure, intelligent information management with modern advanced ICT applications, sustainable environment and urban innovations to upgrade the quality of life of its citizens and sustain the urban system development by addressing compulsory city dimensions and domains. In essence, it can be summarized that there are two mainstreams in the present Smart City discussion:

1) the ICT and technology-oriented approach and

2) the people-oriented approach (Ahvenniemi, Huovila, Pinto-Seppä, & Airaksinen, 2017).

#### 2.3 Characteristics of Smart Cities

Mostly the literature discourse on the characteristics of Smart Cities discuss its technology dominant role and several other drivers of the global interest in Smart Cities (Letaifa, 2015). Essentially the characteristics of Smart Cities can be identified mainly by three ways; 1) By reviewing the elements of Smart City definitions, 2) By identifying the unique characteristics with compared to similar city conceptualisations and 3) By reviewing the Performance Measurement models/ frameworks/ systems for Smart Cities.

#### 2.3.1 Elements of recent Smart City definitions

Mostly the problems in cities occur due to inefficient use of resources, inefficient communication, limited access to administrative data, poor disaster resilience and erroneous information; they are acknowledged in characterizing Smart Cities (Batagan, 2011). Correspondingly, Monzon (2015) brought in the international experience in addressing several problems related to infrastructure, economy, community, resources and governance and services in the Smart City projects in Europe and Mediterranean Region. By introducing different unique characteristics, it implies that Smart Cities prevent the problems occurred in basic cities to take place any further. They are known as definitional elements that most researchers highlight (Yigitcanlar et al., 2018). However, as the Smart City concept is still evolving

(Tomar and Gupta, 2019), the concept of Smart City needs to be investigated in the latest context as shown in Table 2.2;

Sources	a	b	c	d	e	f	g	h	i	j
Elements										
All means of innovations in the urban atmosphere (ICT-based, yet not necessarily)/ innovative engineering approaches/ innovative and advanced services to the community	~		V	V	<b>~</b>				✓	•
Improved economy	$\checkmark$					✓		✓		
Improved people related aspects/ smart incorporation of contribution and activities of self-decisive, free, and updated citizens	V				V	✓		~		
Improved government/ public government openness/ encouraged community participation	~	<b>v</b>			<b>v</b>	<b>√</b>		•		
Improved mobility/ effective management of traffic and public transport	~	~			~	<b>~</b>		~		
Improved living/ Upgraded quality of life/ improved public services/ Human and societal capital investments	~	<b>√</b>		V	~	<b>√</b>		•		
Improved environment/ sustainable environment/ improved environmental protection	•	<b>~</b>		•	~	<b>√</b>		•		
Use of advanced ICT/ Complex information, computation and communication systems/	•	~	~					~	~	~
Intelligent device control/ critical infrastructure management/ Intelligent use of ICT in an interactive infrastructure/ mutual concessions between modern technology and native methods/ Integration of ICT into the urban structure including the operation of urban services, efficient management of shared resources by operators themselves with the aid of electronic monitoring and		~	~	~	~	×	<ul> <li>Image: A start of the start of</li></ul>	~	~	~

Table 2.2: Smart Cities definitional elements.

Sources	a	b	c	d	e	f	g	h	i	j
Elements										
control, implementation of ICT in different fields to encourage innovations, and knowledge that ICT can convey/ use of BIM										
Optimum resource utilization/ sustainability of resources and their applications for next generations		•		•	•			•	•	~
Increasing number of documentations including specifications, reports, and guidance										*
a-(Anthopoulos et al., 2019); b-(Xie et al., 2019); c-(Abbas et al., 2019); d- (Ismagilova et al., 2019); e-(Samih, 2019); f-(Blanck et al., 2019); g-(Tomar and Gupta, 2019); h-(Qian, Wu, Bao, & Lorenz, 2019); i-(Sharma and Meyer, 2019); j-(Heaton and Parlikad, 2019)										

The above key phrases and key words formed sensible definitions and introductory sentences to describe Smart Cities. Accordingly, they infer that sustainable urban environment, intelligent use of ICT, advanced infrastructure, satisfaction and wellbeing of citizen, encouraged community participation, optimum utilization of resource, innovations, well-performing governance, sustainable economic growth and information management cannot be disregarded in exploring what makes Smart Cities phenomenal with compared to a basic city. Having mutual concessions between modern and natives' methods, as well as relationship with BIM are quite unpopular, especially, absent in similar reviews carried out earlier (Albino et al., 2015; Gil-Garcia et al., 2015; Yigitcanlar et al., 2018), yet worth noticing. The characteristics identified in the table however are in line with the characteristics summarized in Albino et al.'s (2015) study, namely; integrated infrastructure which empowers political efficiency, cultural and social development, business-led urban growth, futuristic and creative activities aiming urban growth, social inclusion of different urban residents, social capital for urban development, natural environmenta strategic component for future. The above characteristics were abridged from different studies including Mahizhnan (1999), Giffinger et al. (2007), Eger (2009), Thuzar (2011), Nam and Pardo (2011), Barrionuevo et al. (2012), Kourtit and Nijkamp (2012), Chourabi et al. (2102). Similarly, Hollands (2008) has identifies

most of the above characteristics plus improved economic efficiency, social and environmental sustainability.

By and large, with critical infrastructure and information management, modern advanced ICT applications, and urban innovations Smart Cities appear to upgrade the quality of life of its citizens and sustain the urban system development by addressing compulsory city dimensions and domains.

#### 2.3.2 Comparison of city conceptualisations with Smart City initiatives

Several authors have identified that investigating the popularly used city concepts facilitate setting out a multidimensional facet about the characteristics of Smart Cities (Nam and Pardo, 2011). In other words, while defining a basic city is highly subjective, several highlights of different city conceptions allow identifying the novelty of Smart Cities and their unique characteristics. Table 2.3 includes a comparison (based on the most obvious differences) with some of the labels which were controversial in certain marketing contexts.

Different City Conceptions	Smart City	Source	
i) Digital city			
Main focus is on the technological	Focus is not limited; deals with	(Caragliu,	
attributes of a city.	enhancing the quality of life, sustainable	Del Bo, &	
	development, pollution reduction, energy	Nijkamp,	
	management, management of urban	2011)	
	green spaces, and all other aspects of		
	daily life.		
ii) Intelligent city			
Solutions encourage advancing	Provision of solutions are on the basis of	(Komninos,	
human intelligence and	improving vibrant communities in urban	2019)	
innovative/ quality decision-	systems with the use of ICT-based		
making / problem-solving using	instrumentation, sensors, and smart		
larger datasets and effective user	devices.		
engagement			

Table 2.3: Comparison of city conceptualisations with smart-city initiatives.

Different City Conceptions	Smart City	Source	
iii) Ubiquitous city (U-city)			
Represents a sustainable and	U-city's vital services include smart	(Lee, Han,	
environmental conscious Smart	education, transport, homes, and	Leem, &	
City	medicare.	Yigitcanlar,	
		2008)	
iv) Global city			
In means of the inception, Smart	Although ICT infrastructure is	(Yadav and	
Cities are the advanced versions	significant in the both, Smart Cities are	Patel, 2015)	
and are number of steps ahead of	more community oriented and are		
global cities	apprehended to deal with community		
	initiatives		
v) Sustainable cities			
Concept is developed on the basis	The concepts were branched out and	(Elgazzar	
that implementation of smart	parallel. Therefore, can rather introduce	and El-	
solutions in line with smart	the compatible version as "smart	Gazzar,	
technologies leads to	sustainable city".	2017)	
sustainability			

Based on the most obvious differences, it is apparent that a Smart City represents something more than the above different types of cities, except for the U-city which defines itself revolving around the term Smart City. Some chronological studies have identified that Smart City is the upshot of the global city development process where it carries the major aspects of global cities, liveable cities, and sustainable cities plus knowledge-based urban development and community participation (Yadav and Patel, 2015). In the process of looking at the variances, ICT plays a main role resulting in most of the concepts to overlap (Hartley, 2005). Comparison with different city concepts remarkably bring out two cornerstones; urban development, attributing to the technology-oriented knowledge economy and public sector development in terms of high-quality government operations with ICT-driven corporate practice and crosssectoral innovation (Goodspeed, 2014). However, it can be seen that some city conceptualizations are newly incorporated with smart tag due to the marketability of the Smart City brand; for example, Songdo was originally branded as a 'ubiquitous city' and afterwards accepted as 'compact Smart City' (Yigitcanlar, et al., 2018).

In conclusion, the key terms can be conceptualised in a diagram as shown in Figure 2.1;

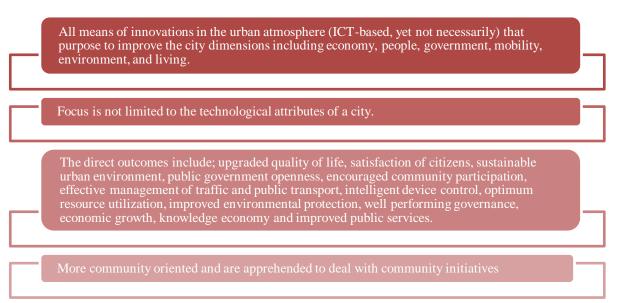


Figure 2.1: Key terms of Smart Cities

#### 2.4 Performance Measurement

Performance Measurement is known to as a process with which an organization monitors the important aspects of its operations, programmes, systems, etc. by measuring the performance and comparing it with organizational goals (U. S. Department of Health and Human Services, 2011). Heini (2007), followed by a review of existing minimal number of definitions, defines Performance Measurement as an activity or process where the end results are quantified and compared with a set of predefined goals.

#### 2.4.1 Key concepts in measuring performance

#### **Performance Measures and Performance indicators**

Harbour (2017) refers performance indicators as a numerical expression of the extent to which a desired outcome has been or is being achieved. Capturing that aforementioned extent requires stated performance goals and accompanying performance metrics (Harbour, 2017). By that means the terms performance measures and performance metrics play different measuring roles and therefore are essentially synonymous as they possess specific attributes of (performance) measurement (Keong Choong, 2013). Performance indicators on the other hand are the performance metrics that measure an output, defined along a particular performance dimension and its associated performance goal (Heini, 2007). Performance Measures in this study is referred to as the all the performance indicators as well as the categories of those indicators.

#### **Performance Measurement Systems**

Performance Measurement System is referred to as a set of metrics that is used to quantify the effectiveness and efficiency of outcomes/actions where efficiency refers to a measure of how optimally the resources are utilized to provide a desired level of customer satisfaction and effectiveness depicts the extent to which requirements of the customer are met (Neely, Gregory, & Platts, 2005). According to Theoretically, the major purposes of developing a Performance Measurement System is to document the performance and assist decision making (Moynihan, 2005). In support of that, Harbour (2017) emphasized how critical it is to quantitatively measure the performance so as to achieve desired performance goals. Despite Performance Measurement was initially limited to measuring the financial performance in terms of profit, return on capital employed, cashflow, etc., now a greater emphasis is given on rather multidimensional and non-financial measures that allows a better understanding of the performance of an organization so as to achieve organizational goals and business results (Harvey & Technical Information Service, 2008). Ensuring to strike a balance between financial and nonfinancial measures, multidimensional Performance Measurement Systems were proposed intending to facilitate organizations to define suitable measures that can reflect organizational objectives and assess organizational performance satisfactorily (Kennerley & Neely, 2002). In essence, the vital feature of a Performance Measurement System is the incorporation of the organization's strategic objectives (Soltes & Gavurova, 2015).

Whatsoever, Performance Measurement is realized mostly as just another mandate and, therefore, the benefits expected to be higher than the required effort (Nudurupati, Bititci, Kumar, & Chan, 2011).

#### 2.4.2 Performance Measurement in cities

Regardless the type of the organization, effective Performance Measurement provides the basis in ensuring the successful implementation of the organisational strategy (Landy, Zedeck, & Cleveland, 2017). Especially the public sector and all other central agencies in government having their major concerns upon proving transparency and accountability, started to have strong considerations on Performance Measurement and management (Goh, 2012). Even in the context of cities, Performance Measurement refers to an internal informational tool which allows the evaluation of operations and make programme related and budgetary decisions; and has showed a significant progress in use over the past few decades (Ho & Ni, 2005). In present developing performance analysis tools/ frameworks / indices and city benchmarking is mostly taken place as a part of the academic, private, public and non-for-profit agencies in city (Yigitcanlar, 2014).

Performance Measurement has become increasingly important with the growth of nonprofit sector in a more professionalized manner and consequent changes in to the requirements with accountability and increased number of stakeholders (LeRoux & Wright, 2010). In fact, as per Ho & Ni (2005) sophistication and depth of Performance Measurement has been expanded both in less technical customer-oriented areas such as recreational spaces as well as highly technical areas such as street maintenance.

#### 2.4.3 Performance Measurement in Smart City development

According to Landy et al. (2017), performance and the measurement of performance, is a situational expectation that differs with various occasions in conducting human affairs. While this situational expectation turns out to be a "superior expectation", in other words, the common expression "success" measuring performance is problematic as the definition of success is changing (Landy et al., 2017).

Consequently, when such occasions happen to be "Smart Cities", a vision with regards to the aforementioned situational superior expectation is indubitably even more convoluted, as the superior expectation has not reached a consensus yet (Gil-Garcia et al., 2015). In fact, due to the complications of interests gravitated around public administration in Smart Cities, as a result of the wide variety of work performed and their complex interconnection, the concept of Performance Measurement needs to appreciate the multi-dimensionally (Bouckaert and Halligan, 2008). Moreover, determining the depth of performance of Smart Cities' administration at different levels such as local government, organisations, and individuals and the span in classified content dimensions is rather comprehensive (Merli and Bonollo, 2014).

Number of authors have come up with different Performance Measurement Systems addressing a broad span (Lombardi et al., 2012; Komninos, 2008; Merli and Bonollo, 2014; Shen et al., 2018; Australian Government, 2017; Ambrosetti, 2012). Meanwhile, some have distinguished between the depth over span to a given content dimension, e.g., Garau et al. (2015) benchmark only the Smart Urban Mobility. Whatsoever, these systems witness the need of Performance Measurement in Smart Cities (Albino et al., 2015). Alternatively, to fulfil the requirements of a Smart City it is important to benchmark appropriate Smart City "characteristics" and that again implies the need of accurate benchmarks; which can be used in setting city goals and determining priorities (Harms, 2016).

## 2.5 Importance of Performance Measurement in Smart City Development

According to the famous maxim, "whatever is measured will only get done" (Behn, 2003) and consequently the absence a Performance Measurement System would give negative impacts everything starting from determining city goals and requirements (Brorström et al., 2018). Wide availability of Performance Measurement in Smart City reached the point where smartness of the Smart City itself is determined by the implemented Performance Measurement System for the particular Smart City (Albino et al., 2015). Following are some of the advantages that prove how important Performance Measurement is in Smart City development.

## 2.5.1 Performance management of smart cities

According to Pollitt (2013) performance management refers to the process shown in Figure 2.2;

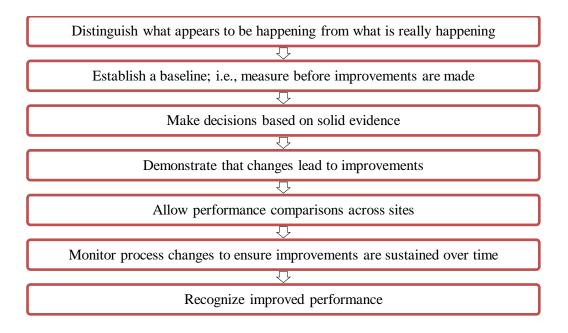


Figure 2.2: Performance Management Process Source: Pollitt (2013)

According to the above illustration, Performance Measurement provides an answer regarding the progress tracking of an implemented strategy whereas performance management manages achieving that whole strategy (Moynihan & Pandey, 2010). While the two terms are complementary to one another, without Performance Measurement, establishing the conditions of performance management success is challenging (Moynihan & Pandey, 2010). This obviously can be related to smart cities as well.

# 2.5.2 Monitoring and controlling the applications of smart city requirements

As per Fredrick W. Taylor's management by exception principle, attempts to control every aspect resulting in controlling of nothing; remarks one of the most popular aphorisms in Performance Measurement (Shafritz et al., 2016). According to Harbour (2017), having performance measures together with performance goals

allows tracking goal achieving progress and ensuring the maintenance of it. As a part of the same process, the performance level can then be compared and benchmarked against the competitors' levels of performance with which variations can be identified and controlled (Harbour, 2017).

## 2.5.3 Improved decision making by smart city policymakers and other involved parties

Performance Measurement can be considered as a reliable process to determine how well the current system of an organization is working (U. S. Department of Health and Human Services, 2011). Performance data equip the responsible parties with information solid evidence-based decisions can be made (LeRoux & Wright, 2010).

## 2.5.4 Accountability of smart city administration

Given the demand in today's economy for scrutiny and transparency in operations and practices of an organization, outcome and process data is an ideal source to demonstrate the organizational performance (U. S. Department of Health and Human Services, 2011).

#### 2.5.5 Strengthened local democratic institutions

When local government is made more accountable in terms of reflecting citizens' interests, citizens tend to keep more trust on the government institutions which results in such institutions to be more result driven (Sanger, 2008).

## 2.5.6 Supported strategic planning and target setting for smart cities

Use of a proper Performance Measurement System allows linking operational objectives with strategic objectives of an organization (Soltes & Gavurova, 2015). A progress direction and a point of reference for the results progress direction is provided (Yigitcanlar, 2014).

## 2.5.7 Improved communication among smart city project participants

Performance Measurement plays the role of a common language other than sharing the knowledge among the stakeholders who are engaged in a project (Keong Choong, 2013)

#### 2.5.8 Continuous improvement of smart cities

Performance Measurement not only increased visibility of the performance but also directs behaviour and focuses attention. With a proper Performance Measurement System that integrates strategic and operational objectives in an organization ensures the continuous improvement along with everyday activities (Soltes & Gavurova, 2015). Information produced by Performance Measurement Systems as a result of continuous evaluation of work, permits tracking the improvements in operations overtime and that guides the executives to introduce and tailor new strategies for varying priorities (Sanger, 2008).

## 2.5.9 Overall success of the smart city

A predetermined set of measurement attributes included in a Performance Measurement System provides measurable expectations in line with organizational vision and strategy to its employees in understanding each of their roles and thereby they may contribute to the overall success of their organization (Keong Choong, 2013). Performance data provides valuable insights regarding the organizational strengths and weaknesses (LeRoux & Wright, 2010). Having the lessons learned from comparisons done using the Performance Measurement System, cities may explore beyond their borders in the means of stimulating development and learning resulting in the cities to discover potential development, early warning signals and problem-solving strategies (Huggins, 2010).

## 2.5.10 Funding/ budgeting on smart cities

Many cities around the world have put efforts link budgeting with Performance Measurement and as a result budget documents included performance measures reported along with mission statements and goal statements (Ho & Ni, 2005). With increased demonstrative evidences the trust on government can be restored and therefore many funding agencies active in developing countries especially tend to rely on performance information (Putu, Jan van Helden, & Tillema, 2007).

#### 2.5.11 City benchmarking

Holloway & Wajzer (2008) elaborates the ultimate process of gaining a competitive advantage through benchmarking as shown in Figure 2.3;

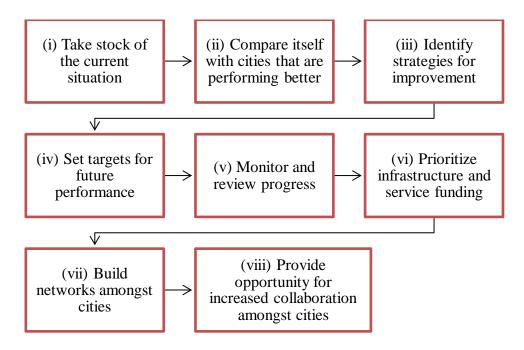


Figure 2.3: Steps to obtain a competitive advantage through benchmarking Source: Holloway and Wajzer, 2008

Corresponding to the above steps, Yigitcanlar (2014) highlighted the importance of benchmarking the progress against high achiever cities as a clear gap analysis can only be done with the benchmarking together with a comparative analysis.

## 2.5.12 Politically valuable outcomes in contested environments

Creating a win win situation, citizens can know the quality of services delivery while the legislators may get an idea on how well they should meet the desires of their constituents (Sanger, 2008).

## 2.5.13 Civic support for public efforts

With the increased legitimacy of public authorities, the tax payers of the city can be made satisfied when they attempt to hold the local officials accountable for service delivery (Sanger, 2008).

#### 2.6 Evaluation of Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities

Performance Measurement System, often referred to as a numerical/ graphical information system, is designed to monitor, evaluate, diagnose and accomplish anticipated performance levels through defining, collecting, producing, delivering and demonstrating performance-related information (Harbour, 2017). Complying to this definition, Performance Measurement Systems/frameworks/ models produced for Smart Cities too define the smartness of a Smart City with related to performance-related information. Thereby various Performance Measurement methods and indices have been developed throughout the evolvement of the concept Smart Cities and its definitional elements (Albino et al., 2015). The actual measurement objectives in measuring the performance of Smart Cities were categorized with content dimensions of a Smart City as observed by different institutes (Merli and Bonollo, 2014). They are the same aspects in which Smart Cities mostly require indicators to measure their performance (Huovila et al., 2017). In other words, it is these aspects which different authors term as themes/sub-themes (Bosch et al., 2016); characteristics/factors (Giffinger et al., 2007); clusters (Lombardi et al., 2012); blocks (Komninos, 2008); dimensions (Merli and Bonollo, 2014); categories (Shen et al., 2018); and layers (Zygiaris, 2013) measure the performance of a Smart City in terms of smartness of those each aspect.

## 2.6.1 Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities

The progression of Performance Measurement Systems in Smart Cities can be traced back to 2007, with the formation of Giffinger et al.'s (2007) system to assess the performance of Smart Cities (Merli and Bonollo, 2014). despite the application of the system has meant to be decisive for cities, it is the most cited and widely used due to its comprehensive nature (Bifulco et al., 2016). Therefore, the characteristics of this very system is used as a base in combining all the aspects of a Performance Measurement System in this study as well.

However, the interpretation of a particular theme may not be compatible with the meaning a similar theme from another system hence subthemes becomes informative Airaksinen et al. (2017). Therefore, in this study, the themes/classifications of eight Smart City Performance Measurement Systems are compared intending to form a constructive set of themes and subthemes that can lead to producing comprehensive indicators under each of such themes/sub-themes. Table 2.4 depicts each of the selected Smart City Performance Measurement System's themes and sub-themes (if available).

 Table 2.4: Content Dimensions in Performance Measurement Systems for Smart

 Cities

Source	а	b	c	d	e	f	g	h
Content Dimensions								
People/ Smart People	~	~	~	~		~	~	
Planet/ Smart Environment	~	~	V		~	~	~	~
Prosperity/ Smart Economy	~	~	~	~	~	~	~	
Governance/ Smart Governance	~	~	~			~	~	
Propagation – Replicability and scalability, Factors of success	~							
Smart Mobility	~	~	~	~		~	~	~
Smart Living	~	~	~	<b>√</b>	~	~	~	~

a-(Bosch et al., 2016); b-(Giffinger et al., 2007); c-(Lombardi et al., 2012); d-(Komninos, 2008); e-(Merli and Bonollo, 2014); f-(Shen et al., 2018); g-(Australian Government, 2017); h-(Ambrosetti, 2012)

Out of a number of Performance Measurement Systems, only the above were selected for this study due to their holistic approach. In other words, they have looked at all the city domains and were not limited to an in depth study on a particular theme. Moreover all these Performance Measurement Systems included indicators and indicator classifications which were defined for this study as Performance Measures (refer 2.4.1 Performance Measures and Performance indicators). Accordingly, a basic PRISMA (Preferred Reporting Items for Systematic

Reviews and Meta-Analyses) Analysis where the literature sources were shortlisted based on the aforementioned criteria. According to Table 2.4, it can be seen that axes focused under Giffinger et al.'s (2007) system based on the theories of human and social capital, ICT economics, regional competitiveness, transport, natural resources, participation of societies and quality of life of citizens in a city have been an underlying support in forming the successive Performance Measurement Systems. The other reason for this system to be controversial is the commonly accepted grounds such as 'regional, traditional, and neoclassical theories on urban development and growth' on which this is based (Ojo, et al., 2015).

The indicator system produced by Komninos (2008) was originally named as Metrics for "intelligent cities". However, the author did not provide a clear-cut difference between the intelligent cities and Smart Cities; in fact, by referring the terms as of having similar meanings (Komninos, 2008), it was implied that metrics for intelligent cities can be applicable to Smart Cities as well. Given that Smart Cities look beyond intelligent cities, the indicator system may have issues in its scope as well. However, Merli and Bonollo (2014) in their research have identified the four blocks that measure fundamental dimensions of the intelligent city and their indicators which were presented in Komninos (2008) study as also applicable as a Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities. Consequently, Merli and Bonollo's (2014) Performance Measurement System was inspired by the aforementioned two systems along with The European House Ambrosetti's system. Similarly, Lombardi et al.'s (2012) system was inspired by Giffinger et al. (2007)'s system with particular reference to the (revised) triple helix.

Similarly, the Performance Measurement System developed by Bosch et al. (2016) covered similar content dimensions which were also identified in Giffinger et al.'s (2007) system while emphasizing some aspects like Prosperity and Propagation through theming. Whereas Shen et al.'s (2018) system, which aimed the Chinese context, replaced the themes Smart Living and Smart Mobility with Smart Infrastructure. Meanwhile, the system constructed for the Australian context by Australian Government (2017) took a completely different form of theming.

## **2.6.2** The Most Significant Themes/ Dimensions in a Performance Measurement System for a Smart City

Given the significance of Giffinger et al.'s (2007) system, it was used as the basis to understand the most significant themes. The sole purpose of signifying themes is to incorporate every possibility of the indicators so as to form the comprehensive summary Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities. Although the themes Smart People and Smart Living are usually considered separate two themes, the compared systems convince that both can be considered as a single theme when amalgamating the systems/themes. Therewith it can be observed the following as the most significant themes.

#### **Smart Economy**

Bosch et al.'s (2016) content dimensions "Prosperity" refers to the "economic viability" and "project value" to users, stakeholders, neighbourhood, and indirectly affected entities. Authors also consider the subtheme "Economic Performance", which provides a compatible definition to the focus area of Smart Economy introduced by Giffinger et al. (2007). Similarly, in Komninos's (2008) system, "innovation performance" covers aspects of Giffinger et al.'s (2007) Smart Economy in general. However, Giffinger et al. (2007) emphasized much on the economic competitiveness and therefore the factors around that. Although this is the case, the other systems specify the economic outcomes of Smart City initiatives as per Chourabi et al. (2015) such as business/job creation, development of the workforce, and improved productivity as their content dimensions. For example, Production - Merli and Bonollo (2014), Jobs and Skills and Innovation and Digital Opportunities (Australian Government, 2017).

## **Smart People and Smart Living**

According to Giffinger et al.'s (2007) classification smartness of people refers not only to the level of education/qualification but also to their open-mindedness, social interactions, public life, and other aspects like flexibility and creativity while the classification of smart living encompasses the aspects of quality of life of citizens with regards to housing, health and safety, education, cultural facilities, social cohesion, and touristic attractivity. These similar aspects under smart living are mentioned under the people factor in Bosch et al.'s (2016) classification. Importance is given to the "education and skills of the population" and "knowledge and innovation institutions" in Komninos (2008)'s classification as well. Similarly, in Merli and Bonollo's (2014) classification the quality of life of the community factor is highlighted. In the Australian Government's (2017) Performance Measurement System relatable content dimensions are mentioned. For instance, "Jobs and Skills", which was aforementioned under smart economy has additions like educational attainment which comes under the smart people classification as per Giffinger et al. (2007). In addition to that the two policy priorities in Australian Government (2017)'s Performance Measurement System; "Liveability and Sustainability" which represent indicators purely based on the quality of life factor of citizens and "Housing" come under Giffinger, et al. (2007)'s Smart Living classification.

#### **Smart Governance**

Giffinger et al. (2007) emphasized governance as a key factor that requires attention in three main areas; the political participation, public administration, and services for citizens. Governance is classified with a similar interpretation by Bosch et al. (2016). In fact, both the classifications highlight the transparency of governance together with community involvement in decision making. In the Australian Government's (2017) system Governance together with Planning and Regulation are discussed with regards to governance fragmentation. Similarly, in Shen et al.'s (2018) system, although the classification termed as Smart Governance, new aspects like e-Government availability, participation by social media, and trading platforms for public resources have raised the concerns. Having users of e-gov as an indicator under digital infrastructure and e-services, Komninos (2008) has also paid attention on this regard.

#### **Smart Environment**

Giffinger et al. (2007) described Smart Environment mainly in terms of the attractivity of natural conditions such as green spaces, and climate the efforts taken towards resources and pollution management and environmental protection. The areas such as resource management, pollution and waste management, and attractivity and conservation of ecosystem which Giffinger et al. (2007) considered as important are also emphasized by Bosch et al. (2016) as well. They further added the focus areas like energy and mitigation, as well as climate resilience under Smart Environment/planet classification. Similarly, Merli and Bonollo (2014), Australian Government (2017), and Ambrosetti (2012) too have themed Eco-sustainability and Resource management respectively under their classifications.

#### Smart Mobility

While Giffinger et al. (2007), Lombardi et al. (2012), and Ambrosetti (2012) refer smart mobility under transport and ICT infrastructure authors like Komninos (2008), Merli and Bonollo (2014), and Shen et al. (2018) rather highlighted the importance of the ICT infrastructure. Alternatively, the Australian Government, (2017) has considered mobility under the two classifications, namely "Infrastructure and Investment" and "Innovation and Digital Opportunities". Under "Infrastructure and Investment" they referred to transportation where they have specified the indicators such as Jobs accessibility (in 30 minutes), work trips by the public, and active transport and peak travel delay. Under "Innovation and Digital Opportunities" they have discussed the indicator Broadband connections which is one of the indicators used by Komninos (2008) under his Digital infrastructure and e-services classification. Shen, et al. (2018) have also specified a similar set of indicators in elaborating their classification of smart infrastructure.

## **Propagation**

This theme is classified under the Bosch et al.'s (2016) system where propagation is referred to as the potential of a Smart City solution(s) to replicate and scale to other locations/contexts/cities depending on the Smart City project's inherent

characteristics. However, this theme should be construed in a way that it does not show any intention to compromise the identity of an existing context to where the Smart City is designed, as ideally the whole Smart City concept should be understood without disturbing the existing conditions (Tomar and Gupta, 2019).

The importance of layer wise classification (University, Government, Civil society, and Industry) of each theme can be considered as the most vital lesson to be obtained from Lombardi et al.'s (2012) system. Therefore, listing of indicators for each layer of themes/subthemes is an ideal way to cross check the summary Performance Measurement System.

Likewise, the outcome of the reviewing of themes resulted in briefing of the themes to six, namely Smart Economy, Smart People and Smart Living, Smart Governance, Smart Environment, Smart Mobility, and Propagation. Figure 2.4 depicts sub-themes that have been identified under each of the themes.

<ul> <li>SMART ECONOMY</li> <li>Economic performance</li> <li>Innovation, Innovative spirit, and Innovation performance</li> <li>Entrepreneurship</li> <li>Economic image &amp; trademarks</li> <li>Production and Productivity</li> <li>Employment, Flexibility of labour market, and Jobs and Skills</li> <li>International embeddedness</li> <li>Equity</li> <li>Green economy</li> <li>Attractiveness &amp; competitiveness</li> <li>Education and Research and Development</li> </ul>	<ul> <li>SMART PEOPLE</li> <li>Level of qualification, Education and skills of the population</li> <li>Affinity to lifelong learning</li> <li>Social and ethnic plurality</li> <li>Flexibility</li> <li>Creativity</li> <li>Cosmopolitanism and open-mindedness</li> <li>Knowledge about the region/ country</li> </ul> SMART LIVING <ul> <li>Cultural facilities</li> <li>Health conditions</li> <li>Safety</li> </ul>
<ul> <li>SMART GOVERNANCE</li> <li>Organization composition, process, leadership, and transparency</li> <li>Community involvement in decision-making</li> <li>Multi-level governance</li> <li>Governance fragmentation</li> <li>Public and social services</li> <li>Transparent governance</li> <li>Planning and Regulation</li> </ul>	<ul> <li>Education facilities</li> <li>Touristic attractivity</li> <li>Access to (other) services</li> <li>Diversity and social cohesion</li> <li>Quality of housing and the built environment</li> <li>Quality of life of the community</li> <li>Liveability and Sustainability</li> <li>Added value intelligent services</li> <li>Quality of industry-based services</li> </ul>
<ul> <li>SMART ENVIRONMENT</li> <li>Attractivity of natural conditions</li> <li>Eco-sustainability</li> <li>Environmental protection</li> <li>Sustainable resource management</li> <li>Energy &amp; mitigation</li> <li>Materials, water, land, Ecosystem</li> <li>Climate resilience</li> <li>Pollution &amp; waste</li> </ul>	<ul> <li>SMART MOBILITY</li> <li>Local accessibility</li> <li>(Inter-)national accessibility</li> <li>Availability ICT infrastructure</li> <li>Sustainable, innovative and safe cystem</li> </ul> PROPAGATION Replicability & scalability Factors of success

Figure 2.4: Themes and sub-themes for Performance Measurement in Smart Cities

Indicators, the elements that complete Performance Measurement Systems are introduced for each of these subthemes. At a glance on the Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities, it can be seen their difference with compared to the traditional Performance Measurement Systems which focus mainly/ only on the financial aspects of an organisation. As result the Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities belong to the next generation Performance Measurement Systems as per Kulatunga (2008), where the indicators are not limited to financial indicators but broaden to the non-financial, quality related and customer based measures.

## 2.7 Performance Measures for Smart Cities

Bosch et al.'s (2016) system with compared to Giffinger et al.'s (2007) system includes propagation as a concern while smart mobility is missing. Bosch et al. (2016) in their study have identified the indicators in project level as well as city level. As a result, the theme, propagation only comes with project level indicators. As per Bosch et al. (2016), these project indicators allows comparing the with and without situations of Smart City project and thereby the difference the project has made can be assessed.

As the ultimate purpose of combining the system is to generate a holistic common platform in means of a Performance Measurement System, features inherent to the specific geographical region are generalized. For an instance, sub theme and indicator named 'knowledge about EU' coming under Giffinger et al.'s (2007) system is modified as 'knowledge about the region/ country'. However, level of qualification measured with related to ISCED (International Standard Classification of Education) is kept as it is since the qualification equivalents in many countries are given (having ISCED as a baseline). For example, ISCED level 5 is compatible with Higher National Diplomas and level 6 is equivalent to Bachelor's Degree in Sri Lanka (UNESCO Institute of Statistics, 2019).

Lombardi et al.,'s (2012) clusters are classified under the revised triple helix. Following the study on themes and sub themes the revised triple helix was thought to be incorporated in to the Performance Measurement System to be created at the end of this study.

In reviewing all Performance Measurement Systems except for Lombardi et al.,'s (2012), theming/ sub theming was useful as a common format under each of which indicators can be identifyed. However with Lombardi et al.,'s (2012) revised triple helix classification was disregarded in classifying the indicators under the previously identified summary set of themes/ subthemes. The following Table 2.5 includes a summary of all the Performance Measurement Systems studies;

 Table 2.5: A Comprehensive list of Performance Measures for Smart Cities from

 literature

Theme	Sub Theme	Indicators
AMONO	1. 1 Economic performance	Financial benefit for the end user Total cost savings in euros for end-users per household per year Net Present Value (NPV) of the project calculated over the lifetime Internal rate of return (IRR) Payback Period Total cost vs. subsidies The percentage of subsidies as share of total investment of the project
1. SMART ECONOMY	1. 2 Innovation, Innovative spirit, and Innovation performance	Debt of municipal authority per residentInvolvement of extraordinary professionalsThe extent to which the project involved professionalsnormally notencountered in these type of projects- Likert scaleStimulating an innovative environmentThe extent to which the project is part of or stimulates aninnovativeenvironment- LikertQuality of open dataThe extent to which the quality of the open data produced

Theme	Sub Theme	Indicators
		by the project was increased -number of stars
		New start-ups- number of start-ups resulting from the
		project
		Improved interoperability- The extent to which the project
		has increased interoperability between community
		infrastructures
		Employment rate in:
		High Tech and creative industries; Renewable energy and energy efficiency systems Financial intermediation and business activities; knowledge-intensive sectors; Culture and entertainment industry; Commercial services; Transport and communication; Hotels and restaurants; All companies (total number)
		Number of local units manufacturing High Tech & ICT
		products
		Patent applications per inhabitant
		Number of incubators (per million of population)
		Number of S&T Parks (per million of population)
		Number of Technology Transfer and Innovation Centres
		(per million of population)
		Exports high-tech services (per cent total exports)
		New trade marks (per million of population)
		Enterprises having internal R&D (Research and Development) department (per cent of all enterprises)
		Sales of new-to-market products (per cent of turnover)
		Sales of new-to-firm not new o-market products (per cent
		of turnover)
		<ul> <li>New business models for smart growth and quality of life</li> <li>New business models</li> <li>Living Labs</li> <li>Creative class</li> <li>Web of Trust</li> </ul>
	1.3 Entrepreneurship	Self-employment rate
		New businesses registered
		Percentage of projects funded by civil society
	1.4 Economic image &	Importance as decision-making centre (Head Quarters-HQ
	trademarks	etc.)

Theme	Sub Theme	Indicators	
	1.5 Production and	GDP (Gross Domestic Product) per employed person	
	Productivity	GDP per head of city population	
	1. 6 Employment,	Increased use of local workforce	
	Flexibility of labour market, Jobs and	Local job creation	
	Skills	Unemployment rate	
		Proportion in part-time employment	
	1.7 International	Companies with HQ in the city quoted on national stock	
	embeddedness	market	
		Air transport of passengers	
		Air transport of freight	
	1.8 Equity	Fuel poverty- The percentage of households unable to	
		afford the most basic levels of energy	
		Costs of housing - % of population living in affordable	
		housing	
		Median or average disposable annual household income	
	1.9 Green economy	Certified companies involved in the project	
		Green public procurement- Percentage annual	
		procurement using environmental criteria as share of total	
		annual procurement of the city administration	
		CO2 reduction cost efficiency- Costs per ton of CO2 saved	
		per year	
		Energy intensity of the economy	
		-gross inland consumption of energy divided by GDP	
	1. 10 Attractivene ss & competitiveness	Decreased travel time	
	1.11 Education	Public expenditure on R&D	
	and Research and Development	-percentage of GDP per head of city population	
	_ · · · · · · · · · · ·	Public expenditure on education	
		-percentage of GDP per head of city population	
		Number of research grants funded by international projects	
RT ANCE	2.1 Organization composition, process, leadership, and	2.1.1 Leadership- The extent to which the leadership of the project is successful in creating support for the project Likert	
2. SMART GOVERNANCE	transparency	2.1.2 Balanced project team - The extent to which the project team included all relevant experts and stakeholders from the start- Likert	
9		2.1.3 Involvement of the city administration- The extent to which the local authority is involved	

Theme	Sub Theme	Indicators
	2.2 Community involvement in decision-making	<ul> <li>in the development of the project, other than financial, and how many departments are contributing-Likert</li> <li>2.1.4 Clear division of responsibility- Has the responsibility for achieving the social and sustainability targets been clearly assigned to (a) specific actor(s) in the project? Yes/no</li> <li>2.1.5 Continued monitoring and reporting - The extent to which the progress towards project goals and compliance with requirements is being monitored and reported-Likert</li> <li>2.1.6 Market orientation- The extent to which the project was planned on the basis of a market analysis-Likert</li> <li>2.2.1 Professional stakeholder involvement-The extent to which professional stakeholders outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution-Likert</li> <li>2.2.2 Bottom-up or top-down initiative-Has the project idea originated from the local community? -yes/no</li> <li>2.2.3 Local community involvement in planning phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the planning phase Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the planning phase Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation phase Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation phase Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation phase Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation phase Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process-Likert</li> <li>2.2.5 Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms</li> <li>2.2.6 City representatives per resident</li> <li>2.2.7 Political activity of inhabitants</li> <li>2.2.8 Importance of politics for inhabitants</li> <li>2.2.9 Share of female city representatives</li> </ul>
	2.3 Multi-level	2.2.10Participation by social media2.3.1Smart City policy - the extent to which
	governance	the project has benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy- Likert 2.3.2 Municipal involvement - Financial support- extent to which the local authority
		provides financial support to the project-Likert
	2.4 Governance	2.4.1 Governance orchestration
	fragmentation	2.4.2 Infrastructure Alignment
		2.4.3 District Regeneration
	2.5 Public and social services	2.5.1 Expenditure of the municipal per resident in PPS
		2.5.2 Share of children in day care
		2.5.3 Satisfaction with quality of schools
		2.5.4 Trading platform for public resources
	2.6 Transparent	2.6.1 Satisfaction with transparency of
	governance	bureaucracy

Theme	Sub Theme	Indicators
L		
	2.7 Planning and	2.7.1 Smart Urban Planning
	Regulation	2.7.2Smart Identity Branding3.1.1Sunshine hours
	3.1 Attractivity of natural conditions	S.1.1     Substitute hours       3.1.2     Green space share
	3.2 Eco-sustainability	3.2.1 % Increase in green and blue space due
	5.2 Leo sustainaointy	to the project
	-	3.2.2 Increased ecosystem quality and
		biodiversity- Extent to which ecosystem quality
		and biodiversity aspects have been taken into
		account-LIKERT
		3.2.3 Percentage of new buildings and
		renovation which were assessed in terms of
		sustainability
	3.3 Environmental protection	3.3.1 Individual efforts on protecting nature
	protection	3.3.2Opinion on nature protection3.3.3An assessment of the ambitiousness of
		CO2 emission reduction strategy
	-	3.3.4 Carbon dioxide emission reduction
		3.3.5 Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emissions
		3.3.6 An assessment of the comprehensiveness
		of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve
		and monitor environmental performance
ΓN	3.4 Sustainable resource	3.4.1 Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)
ME)	management	3.4.2 The total percentage of the working
N		population traveling to work on public transport,
IRC	-	by bicycle and by foot
N		3.4.3 An assessment of the extensiveness of
ΓE		efforts to increase the use of cleaner transport 3.4.4 Percentage of citizens engaged in
SMART ENVIRONMENT		3.4.4 Percentage of citizens engaged in environmental and sustainability-oriented activity
M,	-	3.4.5 The percentage of total energy derived
<b>o</b> 2		from renewable sources, as a share of the city's
		total energy consumption, in terajoules
		3.4.6 Proportion of recycled waste per total
		kilogram of waste produced
	3.5 Energy & mitigation	3.5.1 Reduction in annual final energy
	-	consumption
		3.5.2 Reduction in lifecycle energy use
		3.5.3 Reduction of embodied energy of products and services used in the project
	-	
		3.5.4 Increase in local renewable energy production
		3.5.5 Combined heat and power generation
		percentage of gross electricity generation
		3.5.6 Alternative Energy Master plan
		3.5.7 Maximum Hourly Deficit
		3.5.8 An assessment of the extensiveness of
		city energy efficiency standards for buildings
	3.6 Materials, water,	3.6.1 Increased efficiency of resources
	land, Ecosystem	consumption
		3.6.2 Share of recycled input materials
		3.6.3 Share of renewable materials

Theme	Sub Theme	Indicators
		3.6.4 Share of renewable materials
		3.6.5 Life time extension- <i>The extent to which</i>
		measures were taken to
		3.6.6 prolong the service lifetime of products -
		Likert
		3.6.7 Reduction in water consumption
		3.6.8 Increase in water re-used
		3.6.9 Self-sufficiency – Water- Increased
		share of local water resources
		3.6.10 Increase in compactness
	3.7 Climate resilience	3.7.1 Climate resilience measures- <i>The extent</i>
		to which adaptation options have been considered in the project
	3.8 Pollution & waste	3.8.1 Decreased emissions of Nitrogen
		dioxides (NO2)
		3.8.2 Urban population exposure to air
		pollution by particulate matter micrograms per m3
		3.8.3 Decreased emissions of Particulate
		matter (PM2,5)
		3.8.4 Reduced exposure to noise pollution
		3.8.5 Reduction in the amount of solid waste
		collected
		3.8.6 Summer smog (Ozon)
		3.8.7 Fatal chronic lower respiratory diseases
	4.1 Level of	4.1.1 Importance as knowledge centres (top
	qualification,	research centres, top universities etc.)
	Education and skills	4.1.2 Population qualified at levels 5-6 ISCED
	of the population	4.1.3 Foreign language skills
		4.1.4 % of population aged 15-64 with
		secondary-level education living in Urban Audit
		4.1.5 % of population aged 15-64 with higher
		education living in Urban Audit
		4.1.6 % of inhabitants working in education
LE		and in research & development sector
ΙdΟ		4.1.7 Individual level of computer skills
SMART PEOPLE	4.2 Affinity to lifelong	4.1.8Individual level of internet skills4.2.1Book loans per resident
RT	learning	4.2.1Dook loans per resident4.2.2Participation in life-long-learning in %
[A]		4.2.3 Participation in language courses
VS	4.3 Social and ethnic	4.3.1 Share of foreigners
	plurality	4.3.2 Share of nationals born abroad
	4.4 Flexibility	4.4.1 Perception of getting a new job
	4.5 Creativity	4.5.1 Share of people working in creative
		industries
	4.6 Cosmopolitanism and	4.6.1 Voters turnout at European elections
	open-mindedness	4.6.2 Immigration-friendly environment
		(attitude towards immigration)4.6.3Knowledge about the region/ country
	4.7 Knowledge about the	4.6.3Knowledge about the region/ country4.7.1Voters turnout at city elections
	4.7 Knowledge about the region	4.7.1voters turnout at city elections4.7.2Participation in voluntary work
L	region	

Theme	Sub Theme	Indicators
-	5.1 Cultural facilities	5.1.1 Cinema attendance per inhabitant
		5.1.2 Museums visits per inhabitant
		5.1.3 Total book loans and other media per resident
	5.2 Health conditions	5.2.1 Improved access to basic health care services- <i>The extent to which the project has increased accessibility to basic health care</i>
	-	5.2.2 Encouraging a healthy lifestyle
	-	5.2.3 Waiting time
	-	5.2.4 Life expectancy
	-	5.2.5 Hospital beds per inhabitant
	-	5.2.6 Doctors per inhabitant
	<b>5.2.0.</b> 0.4	5.2.7 Satisfaction with quality of health system
	5.3 Safety	5.3.1 Reduction of traffic accidents
	-	5.3.2 Reduction in crime rate
	-	5.3.3 Improved cybersecurity
	_	5.3.4 Improved data privacy
	-	5.3.5 Crime rate
	-	5.3.6 Death rate by assault
		5.3.7 Satisfaction with personal safety
	5.4 Education facilities	5.4.1 Improved/ satisfaction with access to educational resources/ system
Ċ		5.4.2 Increased environmental awareness
Ň		5.4.3 Improved digital literacy
٨r		5.4.4 Students per inhabitant
SMART LIVING		5.4.5 Satisfaction with quality of educational system
SMA		5.4.6 No. of universities and research centers
	-	5.4.7 No. of courses entirely downloadable
		5.4.7 No. of courses entirely downloadable from the internet/total no. courses
		5.4.8 Percentage of professors and researchers
		involved in international projects and exchange
		5.4.9 Percentage of accessible courses for People with Disabilities (PWD)
	5.5 Touristic attractivity	5.5.1 Touristic Importance as tourist location
	5	(overnights, sights)
		5.5.2 overnight stays in registered
		accommodation in per year per resident
	5.6 Access to (other)	5.6.1 Access to public transport
	services	5.6.2 Quality of public transport
	L T	5.6.3 Improved access to vehicle sharing
		solutions
	Γ	5.6.4 Extending the bike route network
		5.6.5 Access to public amenities
	Γ	5.6.6 Access to commercial amenities
	Γ	5.6.7 Increase in online government services/
		e-Government on-line availability (percentage of
		the 20 basic services that are fully available online)
	F	5.6.8 e-Government usage by individuals

Theme	Sub Theme	Indicators
		(percentage individuals aged 16-74 who have used
		the Internet, in the last 3 months, for interaction
		with public authorities)
		5.6.9 Proportion of the area in for recreational
		sports and leisure use
		5.6.10 Number of public libraries
		5.6.11 Number of theaters and cinemas
	5.7 Diversity and social	5.7.1 People reached
	cohesion	5.7.2 Increased consciousness of citizenship
		and social coherence
		5.7.3 Increased participation of vulnerable
	-	5.7.4 Perception on personal risk of poverty
	-	
	5.9 Quality of housing	2
	5.8 Quality of housing and the built	5.8.1Diversity of housing types5.8.2Connection to the existing cultural
	environment	heritage
		5.8.3 Design for a sense of place
	-	5.8.4 Increased access to urban public outdoor
		recreation space
		5.8.5 Increased access to green space
		5.8.6 Share of housing fulfilling minimal
		standards
		5.8.7 Average living area per inhabitant
		5.8.8 Satisfaction with personal housing
		situation
		5.8.9 Green Building Policies
	5.9 Quality of life of the	5.9.1 Public and community housing
	community	5.9.2 Homelessness rate
		5.9.3 Rent stress
		5.9.4 Mortgage stress
		5.9.5 Housing construction costs
		5.9.6 Dwelling price to income ratio
		5.9.7 Population change per building approval
		5.9.8 Free time
	5.10 Liveability	5.10.1 Adult obesity rate
	and Sustainability	5.10.2 Support in times of crisis
		5.10.3 Suicide rate
		5.10.4 Volunteering
		5.10.5 Office building energy efficiency (New)
	5.11 A.11.1	5.10.6 Access to public transport (New)
	5.11 Added value	5.11.1 i-energy
	city wide intelligent	5.11.2 i-transport
	services	5.11.3 i-democracy
	-	5.11.4i-government5.11.5i-services
	-	
	5.12 Quality of	5.11.6 i-home
	5.12 Quality of industry-based	5.12.1 Number of enterprises adopting ISO 14000 standards
	services	5.12.2 Proportion of people undertaking
1	SULVICUS	industry-based training

Theme	Sub Theme	Indicators
	6.1 Local accessibility	6.1.1 Public transport network per inhabitant
		6.1.2 Satisfaction with access to public
		transport
		6.1.3 Satisfaction with quality of public
	6.2 (Inter-)national	6.2.1 International accessibility
	accessibility	0.2.1 International accessionity
	6.3 Availability ICT	6.3.1 City area covered by cable networks (per
	infrastructure	cent of total area)
		6.3.2 City area covered by Wi-Fi networks
	-	(per cent of total area) 6.3.3 City area covered by xDSL networks
		(per cent of total manufacturing enterprises)
		6.3.4 Computers (per million of population)
		6.3.5 Internet connections (per million of
		population)
		6.3.6 Broadband connections (per million of
	-	population) 6.3.7 Users of e-gov services (per million of
		population)
		6.3.8 City enterprises owning a website (per
Υ		cent of total enterprises)
IL		6.3.9 City enterprises involved in B2B or B2C
BII	-	(per cent of total enterprises) 6.3.10 Number of telephones per household
SMART MOBILITY		(Telephones/person)
RT		6.3.11 Number of handphones per household
MA		(Handphones/person)
$\mathbf{S}$		6.3.12 Development of cloud platform and
	-	application Utilization
		6.3.13 Open and Integrated Urban Operating
		System 6.3.14 Urban OS (Operating System)
		6.3.15 Geospatial
		6.3.16 Smart Grids
		6.3.17 Ontologies
		6.3.18 Semantic
		6.3.19 Linked APIs
		6.3.20 Cloud
		6.3.21 City Infrastructure for "real and
		connected" Life
1		6.3.22 Sensors
		6.3.23 Activators
1		6.3.24 WSAN (Wireless Sensor and Actuator
		Network)
1		6.3.25 B_WISE (Baltimore/Washington
		Information Systems Educators)
		6.3.26 RFID (Radio-Frequency Identification)
		6.3.27 Internet of Things

Theme	Sub Theme		Indicators
	6.4 Sustainable,	6.4.1	Green mobility share (non-motorized
	innovative, and safe		idual traffic)
	transport system	6.4.2	Traffic safety
		6.4.3	Use of economical cars
		6.4.4	Peak travel delay
	7.1 Replicability &	7.1.1	Social compatibility
	scalability	7.1.2	Technical compatibility
		7.1.3	Ease of use for end users of the solution
		7.1.4	Ease of use for professional stakeholders
		7.1.5	Trialability
		7.1.6	Advantages for end users
n		7.1.7	Advantages for stakeholders
atic		7.1.8	Visibility of Results
Dag		7.1.9	Solution(s) to development issues
Propagation		7.1.10	Market demand
Ч	7.2 Factors of success	7.2.1	Changing professional norms
		7.2.2	Changing societal norms
		7.2.3	Diffusion to other locations
		7.2.4	Diffusion to other actors
		7.2.5	Change in rules and regulations
		7.2.6	Change in public procurement
		7.2.7	New forms of financing
		7.2.8	Smart City project visitors

The Performance Measurement Systems used in measuring the Smart City performance often comprised of themes, sub themes and indicators. However, the terms given for sub themes/ themes differ with the study. The following Table 2.5 presents the terms given for themes/ subthemes in each study,

Table 2.6: Different forms under which the indicators were classified in PerformanceMeasurement System from literature

Study	Theme	Sub theme	Indicators
(Bosch et al., 2016)	Themes	Sub themes	Indicators
(Giffinger et al., 2007)	Characteristics	Factors	Indicators
(Lombardi et al., 2012)	Clusters	Revised triple helix	Indicators
(Komninos, 2008)	Dimensions	Blocks	Indicators
(Merli and Bonollo, 2014)	Dimensions	Focus	Indicators

Study	Theme	Sub theme	Indicators
(Shen et al., 2018)	Category		Indicators
(Australian	Policy priorities		Objectives/
Government, 2017)			Indicators
(Ambrosetti, 2012)	Themes	Goals/ drivers	Indicators

Lombardi et al.'s (2012) study having a triple helix form has agencies act as the sub themes. In Bosch, et al.'s (2016) study the subthemes and indicators are defined while in Australian Government's (2017) study the indicators are described. Bosch, et al.'s (2016) study in fact provides a clear description for the measurement basic.While the basis for theme identification was Giffinger et al.'s (2007) study, sub themes were identified by having Bosch, et al.'s (2016) study as the basis. Accordingly, different types of indicators were found as shown in the Table 2.6;

Table 2.7: Different types	of performance	indicators
----------------------------	----------------	------------

Indicator	Description
type	
Input	• Report the amount of fnancial, human and material resources used
Indicators	for smart services
	• Useful for tracking policy decisions, because they can be updated
	quickly once an action occurs.
Output	• Measure the results of an activity.
Indicators	• Can be updated quickly once an action has occurred.
Activity	• Quantity of smart services provided by a smart local government
Indicators	or the amount of work performed
Effectiveness	• The degree which predetermined goals of a particular activity or
Indicators	program are achieved
	• Related to the Smart City capacity to satisfy citizens' needs
	(quantitative and qualitative effectiveness)
Effciency	• The ability of maximizing the quantity and/or quality of the
Indicators	smart services provided in relation to the resources used
Outcome	• The positive and negative effects on stakeholders; they can be
Indicators	referred to social and economic aspects (outcome) or focused

Indicator	Description
type	
	only on environmental aspects (environmental outcome)

Adapted from (Bosch et al., 2016); (Merli and Bonollo, 2014); (Australian Government, 2017)

The variety of indicators show the need of having a holistic system to measure the performance of Smart Cities. The activity indicators, effectiveness indicators and efficiency indicators can be measured also for innovative outputs. In addition to these types, there are lagging and leading indicators incorporated in the above Performance Measurement Systems. Leading indicators allow making decisions regarding future performance levels while lagging indicators are used to notify final results of the actions performed or in other words measure what has already happened (Macpherson, 2001). For instance, Bosch et al.'s (2016) study includes both leading and lagging indicators. Giffinger et al. (2007) have mainly focused on lagging indicators. However, the studies like Maccani, Donnellan, and Helfert (2013) have also produced Performance Measurement Systems without indicators, yet this study only reviewed the Performance Measurement Systems with indicators.

## 2.8 Barriers for Performance Measurement in Smart Cities

At a glance on the extent, variety and complexity of work performed and the resulted in inestimable value production in a Smart City, the prevailing idea with regards to the Performance Measurement in Smart Cities lies in a dissatisfying stage (Dameri & Rosenthal-Sabroux, 2014). As a result, Performance Measurement in Smart Cities is not much perceived in multidimensional terms (Merli & Bonollo, 2014). Above all, lack of an accepted definition for Smart Cities becomes the main barrier in developing a holistic Smart Cities system (Huovila, et al., 2017). The difficulties found in the implementation of Performance Measurement Systems in general is possible to be related to the Smart Cities context as follows.

## **2.8.1 Problems in Implementations**

One of the mostly concerned barriers in the Performance Measurement context is the implementation barrier (Harvey & Technical Information Service, 2008). According to Keathley and Van Aken (2013), many implementation failures are reported causing the efforts geared towards the failed implementations a complete loss. Implementation procedure is very much known to be complicated and lengthy, involving a number of obstacles which prevents organizations from adopting Performance Measurement Systems (Kolingerová, 2016). Smart Cities themselves often comes with various complications such as insufficient state backing, budgetary issues, stakeholder resistance, bureaucracy and failure to attract funding, etc. (Angelidou, 2014). Having such snags left in the feasibility stage of Performance Measurement, the acceptance of Performance Measurement System would definitely be an underlying problem to Smart Cities as well.

## 2.8.2 Cost Vs Benefits

Halachmi (2002) has argued about the increased cost of implementation and introduction of Performance Measurement Systems with compared to its potential benefits. With regards to the non-monetary benefits, the practice to use performance systems just for the sake of satisfying auditors is criticized and so that the true benefits for the society and system are unattainable (Halachmi, 2005). On the other hand, higher the complexity of measuring and excessiveness of performance measured in a Performance Measurement System, higher chance of negative effects due to the time consumed and efforts and investment made (Martinez and Kennerley, 2005). Cost benefit analysis is an imperative in the Smart Cities which themselves are built as a substitute for costly city solutions (Dameri and Garelli, 2014).

## 2.8.3 Complicated and diversified interests of different stakeholders

This was described in detail in Halachmi and Greiling's (2011) study in reference to stakeholder management as "Beauty as seen in the eye of the beholder". Diversified interests makes hard times in the performance appraisal stage due to subjectivity and therefore detain the Performance Measurement implementation by requiring to make

the critical decision with regards to prioritizing the stakeholders (Sanger, 2008). According to Halachmi (2005) this decision can raise a number of methodological and conceptual issues with rework in measuring performance in any type of an organization.

## 2.8.4 Technology aspects

Cavalluzzo and Ittner (2004) asserts that technical issues revolving around Performance Measurement has a worse impact that the cost does. Technological implications usually in developing countries have their limitations and unavailability which cause delays in information and automation issues in the process of Performance Measurement (Nudurupati et al., 2011). As far as the Smart City administration is concerned, data is collected and databases are more often than not are automated (Gomez and Paradells, 2015). Therefore, in the Smart City aspects this might not seem like a problem with compared to different other organizations. Yet, that again depends on the resource availability.

## 2.8.5 Difficulties in obtaining information

Difficulties to access different sources involves extra work and therefore either inaccuracies occur or the Performance Measurement System becomes completely useless without required information timely (De Vries, 2010). This difficulty sometimes takes place in the middle of the procedure, for instance in the refining stage (Halachmi, 2011). The nature of Performance Measurement involves uncertainty, negotiations, ambiguity and constant change (Gao, 2015) and that is even more problematic in a context like Smart Cities where a number of social political and cultural factors can influence.

#### 2.8.6 Data availability and management issues

Lack of information can happen due to various reasons depending on the context in which the Performance Measurement System is used (Martínez-Ballesté, Pérez-Martínez, & Solanas, 2013). For instance, in a city the data to be collected to measure the performance sometime is confidential due to security reasons and data may only be available with certain restrictions (Halachmi, 2011). Duplications due to

storing data in different formats in different departments create delayed decision making due to poor linkages and slow retrieval of data (Nudurupati et al., 2011).

#### 2.8.7 Privacy issues

This has been a problem in public sector which involves personal data which could become a threat to people if hacked (Khatoun and Zeadally, 2016). While data management plays a significant role in Performance Measurement with privacy issues there may be a resistance from general public (Sanger, 2008). Jeopardizing the privacy of Smart Cities citizens is also widely discussed and solutions like off-the-shelf privacy enhancing technologies are introduced (Martínez-Ballesté et al., 2013). However, the until the reliable application of such new technologies, obtaining data without putting citizen's privacy endanger remains a problem (Zhang et al., 2017).

## 2.8.8 Workload

Performance Measurement usually becomes an additional effort which requires a proper training in respect to data collection, meaningful data management and reporting (Landy, Zedeck and Cleveland, 2017). This extra work is not just a oncein-a-project, but keeps continuing with the changing goals and dynamic context demanding the performance measures and reports also to refine and update (Sanger, 2008). Insufficient number of software license agreements to access databases can be another problem where the workload stagnates without being distributed (De Vries, 2010). Unless the roles are defined beforehand along with properly planned governance and city administration, centralized Smart City administration is strenuous (Meijer and Bolívar, 2016).

## 2.8.9 Human involvement

Although the Performance Measurement procedure is comparatively automated to a significant extent, certain operations such as data collection or appraisals involving a cognitive attribute require human involvement which can create problems due to subjectivity and human errors (Carnochan et al., 2014). Moreover, in terms of Performance Measurement in public sector is quite known for political undue

interventions and influences (Halachmi and Holzer, 2010). This is mostly probable in a Smart City like people-oriented context.

#### 2.8.10 Lack of integration

Performance Measurement Systems are ideally designed aligning to the organization's strategic objectives (Kulatunga, Liyanage and Amaratunga, 2010). However, if these objectives are incomprehensible and unclear, developed key performance indicators too become irrelevant (Ittner, 2015). In the same way difficulties take place in breaking down the objectives to lower levels (Nudurupati et al., 2011). Similarly, the inconsistency in defining performance measures across the organizations result in arguments between different units of an organization as the measurement systems for each function/ operation vary in terms of data definitions, ease in accessibility, unit of analysis and the amount of data retained (Bititci, Garengo, Dörfler and Nudurupati, 2012). In this study the organization happens to be the Smart City and the different unit would be the policy making units with regards to each of the identified themes.

## 2.8.11 Internal resistance

While use of Performance Measurement Systems create the conduct transparent, there is a higher chance for the members in that organization to feel uncomfortable and in danger and that can result in a resistance to set in (Bjørnholt and Larsen, 2014). Although this can be easily prevented by linking a reward system with the accomplishment of desired performance, likewise rewarding are barely seen. Further decision-making authority level delegated to the Performance Measurement System's users can cause conflicts in the organization (Ittner, 2015). However, the positive and collaborative environment expected in Smart Cities encourage to achieve greater benefits (Bolívar, 2018).

#### 2.9 Summary

While there are a number of characteristics that depict what a Smart City is, none of them have been evaluated in the Sri Lankan context. Therefore, a thorough investigation on smart characteristics has been carried out by taking the three approaches;1) Reviewing the definitional elements in Smart City definitions put forwards in year 2019, 2) Comparing Smart City concept with similar city conceptualizations, and 3) Reviewing the Performance Measurement frameworks/ systems. The existing Performance Measurement frameworks/ systems for Smart Cities took a similar form and the indicators themselves were smart characteristics. As a result, it was seen that an amalgamation of such systems would produce a holistic frameworks/ system to reflect the smartness of a Smart City depending on the context to which it is applied. However, the implementation comes with barriers and they can be looked in terms of the barriers that are encountered in applying any type of a Performance Measurement System to any industry.

## CHAPTER 03

## **RESEARCH METHODOLOGY**

## **3.1 Introduction**

This chapter intends designing a scientific and systematic way to unravel the research problem. Accordingly, the available research approaches and methods are discoursed by providing justifications to the selected. Subsequently, data collection and analysis procedures are explained. In the latter part, the research process starting from problem definition till analysing and evaluating results, is denoted.

## 3.2 Research methodological design

Research design simply refers to as the blueprint of the research which outlines the data collection and analysis techniques in advance (Kothari, 2004); while research methodology refers to the most justifiable, transparent and clear way the researcher intents to deal with a particular research problem having an idea about the commencement, direction of the research, action plan with suitable data collection and analysis techniques (Jonker & Pennink, 2010). Therefore, research methodological design is the overall framework to answer the research problem (Blanche, Blanche, Durrheim, & Painter , 2006), in the way that is approached and proceeded with a theoretical underpinning on the selection of the suitable method, practice, technique, etc. (Igwenagu, 2016). With a properly designed research methodology, soundly based conclusions on the expanded knowledge frontier through conducting the research, is validated (Walliman, 2011).

It is the adopted research methodology design that directs solving the research problem in a systematic and scientific way (Bhattacharyya, 2006; Kothari, 2004). The choice of research methodology design for built environment researchers mostly becomes either the nested approach (Kaglioglou et al., 1998) or the research onion approach (Saunders et al., 2019) and depending on the nature of the research objectives, the researcher can prefer the most suitable system (Omotayo & Kulatunga, 2015). With both the systems embracing a systematic process towards

conducting a research while providing a basis to make informed decisions, research onion with further layers than the nested method is much more comprehensive (Kulatunga, Amaratunga, & Haigh, 2007). Therefore, the research onion is administered in as the research methodology design in this study. The relevance of the research onion to this study can be illustrated as shown under the Figure 3.1 which shows the research onion;



Figure 3.1: Saunders, Lewis, and Thornhill (2019)'s Research Onion

According to Saunders et al. (2019), the researcher's major concern, data collection and analysis, lies in the core of the onion. However, as a result of the meticulous structure, expected act of "peeling" several layers before reaching the onion core, signifies the concerns to be taken into account prior to the data collection and analysis (Al Zefeiti & Mohamad, 2015). Accordingly, those concerns represent the peels namely, starting from the outermost, philosophy; approach for theory development; methodological choice; strategy (ies); time horizon; and techniques and procedures. The layers are summarized under following topics. Therefore, the discussion is presented in a way that the outermost layers are first described and then the other layers.

## 3.2.1 Philosophy

The view of the researcher with respect to acquiring appropriate knowledge, understanding the holistic picture and interpreting those facts, is based on researcher's philosophical stance (Walliman, 2011). In educational researches, research paradigms are the worldviews of the researchers based on their philosophical orientations (Mackenzie & Knipe, 2006). These research philosophical "paradigms" can be identified as a set of guide actions as well as standpoints which narrates how to construct meanings from a gathered set of data (Kivunja & Kuyini, 2017). Out of the number of research paradigms, the dominant in educational research are, positivist, interpretivist, critical/ transformative and pragmatic paradigms (Melnikovas, 2018). However, each of these paradigm feature different phenomena and it is important to employ the most suitable paradigm to answer each research question in the study, which is known to as the philosophy of pragmatism (Antwi & Hamza, 2015).

Philosophical paradigms can be understood through a set of essential elements namely, ontology, epistemology and axiology (Saunders et al., 2019). Accordingly, ontological, epistemological and axiological assumptions are made by the researcher on realities, human knowledge and the extent/ ways the researcher's value influence that research, respectively (Willis, 2007).

The proposed study expected to produce a Performance Measurement System for the Smart City in Colombo Port City (SMCPC) and thereafter to a Smart City in Sri Lanka which has a similar context to SMCPC based on the literature findings and empirical findings. However, the proposed smart characteristics are not yet thoroughly reviewed. Therefore, an accepted truth is questionable. While the researcher has an opinion on a suitable set of smart characteristics to form a Performance Measurement System, based on the knowledge gained through reviewing existing literature, experts on the area, based on their experience and expertise knowledge may view smart characteristics and performance measurement differently. Even when the researcher requests an expert to evaluate the suitability of a particular smart characteristic obtained from literature, the interpretation is subjective and experts did not construe it the same way the researcher did. Consequently, this research revolves majorly around those interpretative smart characteristics by means of constructing knowledge. However, once the Performance Measurement System, which is suitable to Smart City, was developed with the expert opinion obtained from the limited number of professionals engaged in the CPC project, that was assessed by the professionals who are having a vision for Smart Cities. The applicability of the constructed knowledge through the generated Performance Measurement System was evaluated by a broader sample of respondents making it less subjective. With the development of the system suitable for SMCPC, it was implied that the system would be suitable to a Sri Lankan Smart City with the same city context like in SMCPC. However, as most of the indicators in SMCPC are futuristic and case specific, assessing the suitability of that system to Sri Lanka requires the most significant which essentially does not demand a descriptive approach but an objective approach. Therefore, the study incorporated the features of positivism as well.

According to Thanh and Thanh (2015), when understanding a particular context, interpretivism relies on multiple perspectives and therefore the conclusions or judgements are accepted, influenced by and based on different judgments of the participants of the study; not only the researcher's, which has been the case in developing the system to SMCPC whereas in generating the system suitable for Sri Lanka in general, different opinions were obtained only to signify the indicators and therefore were conclusive. In addition to that, it is the interpretivists who focus on evaluating and refining theories instead of creating completely new theories while the results from positivism are generalizable findings (Antwi & Hamza, 2015). As the gaining of the true knowledge can be done in this study initially is with deep interpretation of the subject, axiologically, the research is more leaned towards value laden. In other words, researcher plays a major role and is a part of the research; exactly the same as this study desires. Therefore, the study adopts pragmatism as its philosophical orientation.

## 3.2.2 Approach

The approach shed light on the research design developed upon the basis of the extent to which the study concerns on theory testing or/and theory building (Saunders et al., 2019). Different authors have come up with several Performance

Measurement Systems to certain contexts. However, such systems cannot be directly used without customizing to Sri Lanka, as a result of the contextual differences. Therefore, based on the theoretical findings (existing Performance Measurement Systems in literature), a suitable Performance Measurement System for Sri Lanka was formed. Likewise, if a research attempts to build a relationship with theory, by bringing data back and forth by means of combining induction and deduction either to modify an existing theory or to define a new theory is known as the abductive approach (Saunders et al., 2019). In fact, Awuzie & McDermott (2017) identifies this as as an appropriate approach to be used in built environment researches.

## **3.2.3 Methodological choice**

According to paradigm of choices, different situations require different research choices (Amaratunga, Baldry, Sharshar, & Newton, 2002). The study adheres to both qualitative as well as quantitative research choices. In pragmatism paradigm, the researcher is encouraged to use both qualitative and quantitative choice and strengthen the study while averting the weaknesses (Samar, 2017). This study investigating how a suitable Performance Measurement System can be formed to Sri Lanka which is exploratory as well as conclusive. It requires a clear understanding about the current context together with the long-term situational facts. In fact, the research possibly will be instructive for future than now, with the maturity of Smart City projects and project concepts which are currently in the inception stage. The authors specify the qualitative paradigm as the methodological choice in a research when it is exploratory, involves why and how investigation (Rajasekar, Philominaathan, & Chinnathambi, 2013) and when it assists understanding a situation (Castellan, 2010). Once the findings of why and how questions are in place the research further seeks to find out an answer to "what" type questions. It includes finding the significant indicators. Further, the experts' contribution in reviewing the suitability of smart characteristics is much high as the relatable literature evidence cannot be found. Nevertheless, such smart characteristics are found in literature in Performance Measurement Systems with particular reference to performance indicators as well. Such literature should be verified. According to Mafuwane (2011), pairing qualitative choice with quantitative choice promotes an improved self-understanding, a greater intuition with human experience and behavior towards a specific condition and verification and extension of theories. Moreover, collecting data using mixed methods increased the credibility of the researcher as he/she has taken every approach to address the research problem (Antwi & Hamza, 2015). Therefore, aiming a rich collection of data, the methodological choice for this study is mixed method.

#### 3.2.4 Strategy

Research strategy provides the direction for a research including the process with which the study is carried out (Remenyi, Williams, Money, & Swartz, 1998). According to Saunders et al. (2019), who emphasized the importance of selecting the most advantageous strategy out of the number of strategies such as experiment, participative enquiry, survey, action research, case study, grounded theory, archival research, ethnography, cross sectional studies and longitudinal studies.

According to Antwi and Hamza (2015), researchers who look at the qualitative approach engross in a culture where they can observe human behavior and interactions, generally, by participating whenever they should attend to observe, interviewing important stakeholders/ participants along with searching histories and analyzing case studies, reviewing documents and important cultural artifacts. This implies a suitability of having a case study for a qualitative phenomenon. In fact, the research question itself being "how and why" type and requiring an in-depth describing of a certain social phenomenon, should be a dawn on the researchers to make case study the strategy of their researches (Yin, 2014). Aiming an in-depth analysis, a single case study has been selected. This case being the most ideal case study available in Sri Lanka falls under the unique category as per Yin's (2014) study. While the initial part of this study, which was to produce a case study to emerging Smart Cities in Sri Lanka was based on a unique single case study, the latter part was to study the suitability of the formed Performance Measurement System to Sri Lanka at large. According to Gomm, Hammersley, & Foster (2000), a case is known to as a microcosm of a large system and therefore the case findings are supposed to be symptomatic of what is going on in the general context. Although this

research was started on grounds of this argument at the end of the preliminary interviews it was seen that the selected case was unique and more of a standing alone occasion with compared to the general Sri Lankan context. However, the argument was not completely thrown away as the case still was a part of the general context although it has unique features. Consequently, the case study findings were not generalized; instead a separate system was developed to the general context based on the findings from a unique case. Therefore, the added features in the system as unique indicators would be insignificant in the general scenario. That significance/ insignificance therefore is important to be assessed and the indicators would be a predesignated set of answers. When the response categories are fixed and collected in number forms to identify the implications of a particular area of research, surveys proved to be useful (Antwi & Hamza, 2015). According to Adolphus, Lawton, & Dye (2013) case studies and surveys are complementary and convenient in sifting the case study findings.

#### Case study design

According to Gustafsson (2017), case studies have a double function, where the case studies become studies of its own unit, as well as case studies of a larger group of units. Researcher are studying multiple cases whenever they are available so as to understand the similarities and the differences between the each other cases (Baxter & Jack, 2008). Single case study design is suitable when the study represents a unique case or critical case or an extreme case or a representative/ typical case or a longitudinal case or a revelatory case (Yin, 2003).

Although there are several cases in Sri Lanka where smart initiatives were tested, a city which is introduced widely as a Smart City is found in only one place; and that is the Proposed SMCPC. In such incidents where the case studies are chosen on the grounds that it would offer an exception to an engrained theory, are known as critical instance case (Sammut-Bonnici & McGee, 2015). At the same time, it can be argued that this case falls under the unique case category as per Yin's (2003) study. Further, it can also be argued that this case to be a representative for probable/ emerging

Smart City projects in the future in Sri Lanka. Therefore, the choice was to do an indepth study with the single case.

According to Yin (2003), by defining a boundary it allows the researcher to identify the scope of the study. Therefore, the boundary simply is the SMCPC in this study. With the selection of the proposed SMCPC as the case study the researcher has to make several critical decisions. The proposed SMCPC is in the feasibility stage with potential utility providers have their own proposals developed and they are yet to be evaluated by the project consultants.

The next step is, defining the unit of analysis. According to Lune and Berg (2016), before beginning the research, researcher should determine the unit of analysis in the study precisely as the focal point in a case or in other words what exactly the case focus on, whether it is an organisation, a group, an individual, "a city", or so forth. In line with their definition, although the main focus in this study is appeared to be a city; specifically, it is the Performance Measurement aspect in the SMCPC. The indistinguishability of the case and unit of analysis is addressed in Grünbaum's (2007) study.

#### 3.2.5 Time horizons

The time frame for the given research being limited, the study is taken at a snap shot is a cross sectional study at a particular time, with compared to a longitudinal study that allows the researcher to study a variable over time (Saunders et al., 2019).

# 3.2.6 Techniques and procedures

In order to develop a Performance Measurement System to a particular context, citizen's day to day setting, city administration, etc. are required to be known. Especially in determining the performance indicators. However, direct observation and participant observations are unable as the project is yet in the inception stage. In the same way, due to the confidentiality, most of the project data are not available for public and therefore the researcher cannot go beyond the system, but properly work on building the system with the support of experts and make this study a basis for future studies on Performance Measurement of Sri Lankan Smart Cities. Although

document analysis also seemed to be an ideal technique to collect data, the authorities restricted the document use by public, and therefore the researcher did not have the accessibility for the documents. As a result, the best method is expert interviews so that the experts who deal with the confidential data for which the researcher couldn't access, can provide their insights. In other words, an in-depth information gathering with regards to SC, PM aspects can be done. According to Du Toit and Mouton (2013), expert interviews enable the researchers to verify the literature review findings from expert views.

The sample was selected adhering to purposive sampling approach. Purposive sampling ensures the purpose of the study is achieved (Singh and Masuku, 2014), by shortlisting a sample of respondents with the knowledge in the research area (Alvi, 2016). In this study, for instance, it is the selected interviewee who know everything in detail of the proposed SMCPC. Purposive sampling technique is recommended to obtain the views from the sample units regarding an existing provision, for example an existing part of literature (Singh and Masuku, 2014). The data collection of the study consisted of 3 stages.

#### **Stage 1: Preliminary Interview Round**

Initially, a face-to face preliminary interview round was carried out with four of the experts from Port City project team. The expectation of this was to depict an answer for the question "will a Performance Measurement System be a helpful tool for the proposed SMCPC?". Therefore, one objective of the preliminary round was to evaluate the importance of the research purpose. On the other hand, for a research student who isn't directly involved in the proposed SMCPC, the indecisive objectives can be an obstruct in developing a Performance Measurement System. However, the professionals who are engaged to this project have an idea about the objectives which are kept in confidentiality without revealing to general public. With preliminary interviews it was intended to find out to which extent that information can be revealed for the research purpose together with the reasons to proceed with the project and the barriers for the implementation. Similarly, the project details available for public wasn't same in all resources, therefore, the preliminary interview

round was used to confirm the accuracy of those details. Interview guideline as APPENDIX A, findings analysis was condensed into two sections and questions were straightforward.

#### **Stage 2: Case Study Interviews**

The case study interviews were carried out for two major purposes. One was to assess the suitability of the developed Performance Measures from the literature to Sri Lanka and the other purpose was to identify the solutions to overcome the barriers (identified through preliminary interviews) in implementing the Performance Measurement System to Sri Lanka. The suitable Performance Measures were the basis for producing a Performance Measurement System as the final outcome of this study. They were conducted face to face for 90 minutes. Interview guideline as APPENDIX B and the questions were straightforward. Case study interviews were conducted with 15 professionals who work attached to the Smart City project. Those professionals represented the Port City Project Company (Contractors' Party), Consultant party (Ministry of Megapolis) and Smart City utility providers/ potential smart experts for the SMCPC (Sri Lanka Telecom); in other words, all the related parties for the SMCPC. At the end of that interview round, a list of Performance Measures that is applicable to the SMCPC was generated as the first step in developing a Performance Measurement System.

#### Details of interviewees

The experts were selected initially with purposive sampling and thereafter using "snowballing technique". The interviewees for the preliminary interview (P1, P2, P3, P4 as mentioned in the below table) were professionals from the consultancy team of Colombo Port City (CPC) project on behalf of the client's party including the project director, deputy director and the responsible planners. They have been found as the most reliable source to get the information about the project in its current development stage. These same set of professionals were interviewed in the case study expert interview rounds as well. Apart from them, another 11 interviewees were selected to be interviewed for the case study and all of them are professionals

who are engaged in the proposed SMCPC. Following Table 3.1 includes the profiles of those respondents;

Interviewee code (ID)	Profession	Designation	Years of experience	Related Key Role	
I1	Engineer	General Manager- Digital Projects/ Enterprise Sales	17	Potential Smart City Expert for CPC/ Utility providers	
I2	Engineer	Deputy General Manager-Product Development & Management	13	Potential Smart City Expert for CPC / Utility providers	
13	Engineer	Deputy General Manager/Enterprise Digital Services	13	Potential Smart City Expert for CPC / Utility providers	
I4	Marketing Manager	Marketing Manager Digital Products	13	Potential Smart City Expert for CPC / Utility providers	
15	Engineer	Deputy General Manager-Corporate Strategy	14	Potential Smart City Expert for CPC / Utility providers	
I6	Urban Planner	Senior Urban Planner	14	Senior Urban Planner for CPC (Contractor party)	
I7	Engineer	MEP Manager	27	MEP Manager for CPC (Contractor party)	
18	Engineer	Deputy Manager – Sales and Marketing	16	Deputy Manager – Sales and Marketing for CPC (Contractor party)	
19	Urban Planner	Architect	5	Landscape architect for CPC (Contractor party)	
I10	Quantity Surveyor	Company associate	14	Cost consultant for CPC	
I11/P1	Chartered Architect	Port City Project Director	26	Port City Project Director (Consultant party)	
I12/P2	Chartered Architect	Deputy Project Director	21	Deputy Project Director CPC (Consultant party)	
I13/P3	Planner	Town Planner / Project Management Unit	8	Town Planner for Consultants' Project Management Unit- CPC Development Project	
I14/P4	Planner	Town Planner / Project Management Unit	9	Town Planner for Consultants' Project Management Unit- CPC Development Project	
I15	Software Engineer	CEO	10	Smart City Project Consultant - CPC Development Project	

Table 3.1: Profiles of the respondents for expert interviews

As the table summarized, the main bodies involved in the SMCPC are the consultant, contractor company of PC and the potential companies that compete to be the smart expert of SMCPC. Likewise, all 5 professionals who are assigned to this project from

the company which was most likely to selected as the smart expert were interviewed. Next different professionals such as planners, architects, engineers, sales and marketing officials representing the contractor company were interviewed. One of the professionals from the outsourced cost consultant company and an external advisor for the project were also interviewed. That covered all of the professionals who are available in Sri Lanka who knew about the proposed project.

#### Case study interview guideline design

The interview guideline comprised of both closed and open-ended questions. The suitability of the Performance Measurement System was investigated with closed ended questions whilst the justifications for the unsuitability and the solutions for barriers in implementing, the question were kept open ended. Mostly the findings from literature whenever acted as a guidance to the respondents were included. The gathered data were analysed manually with content analysis and followed by a discussion based on pattern matching.

#### **Stage 3: Questionnaire Survey Round**

Following the aforementioned data collection that was used to develop the list of appropriate Performance Measures for SMCPC, the next stage was to develop a list of Performance Measures for the emerging Smart Cities in Sri Lanka, in general. Accordingly, a questionnaire survey was carried out. The case study findings are specific to the SMCPC which should be looked in two perspectives. One is that SMCPC being built in Sri Lanka, the city will obviously encompass the Sri Lankan identity and therefore the contextual behavior matters in developing the Performance Measurement System. The other perspective is that SMCPC benchmarks the top world class Smart Cities in developed countries like Dubai, Singapore, etc. On the other hand, by the time the project is completed future Sri Lanka could also be a different place and that should also be considered. Therefore, the research intends to conclude that, although the list of Performance Measures with experts' opinions would end up being a list of Performance Measures that is suitable to 'Sri Lankan cities which can be facilitated similar to SMCPC', yet it is mostly suitable to

SMCPC. In other words, the developed list of Performance Measures at the end of case studies would be one step higher containing futuristic vision for Smart Cities in Sri Lanka. Therefore, that list of Performance Measures can be taken as a basis to develop a Performance Measurement System that is suitable to any kind of Smart City in Sri Lanka, which was done with the questionnaire survey. Survey questionnaire (attached as APPENDIX C) was distributed via online and also the hardcopy, regardless the method, the researcher had to clarify the scoring method as well as how different indicators are interpreted. The allocated time was 90 minutes to fill the questionnaire.

In a comparison study carried out by Fellows & Liu (2015), in terms of breadth vs depth of a question-based studies, out of the different methods, questionnaires are the ideal when the choice is for a broad and shallow study. In this stage of the study the potential smartness indicators for a Smart City in Sri Lanka are known and the respondents will only have to assess their relative importance/ significance. The selected sample (purposive) are the town planners in private and public sectors, policy makers and academics who are having a vision for Smart Cities. They are geographically dispersed. In such situations questionnaires are a more flexible, easier, quicker and convenient tool which allows a fair chance of getting a true reply from the respondents (Walliman, 2017).

#### Details of the respondents

The details of questionnaire survey respondents are analysed under to three main topics; they are, rate of response, type of work involved and the years of experience of the respondents.

#### Rate of response

45 questionnaires were distributed among the professionals who are engaged in city planning and having a vision for Smart Cities in Sri Lanka, out of which 31 professionals responded to the questionnaire. Therefore, the response rate for the questionnaire is nearly a three quarter (69%). Even though there is no any agreement reflected in literature with regards to the acceptable minimum response rate in survey

studies, for biomedical studies some argue it to be 60% (Livingston, 2012) while the others state an adequate rate is 50% (Draugalis, Coons, & Plaza, 2008). Given the low response rate lies in 20% (Kumar, 2019; Fellows and Liu, 2015), the rate of response in this study is above the adequate rate. In fact, the acceptable number of questionnaires to be filled given the data saturation is taken place, is being argued as thirty (Bacon-Shone, 2015). Figure 3.2 illustrates the rate of response and absence in response for the questionnaire survey.

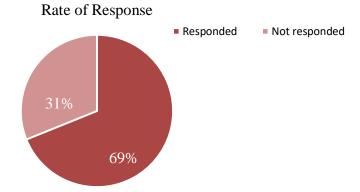
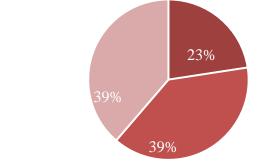


Figure 3.2: Rate of response for the Questionnaire Survey Type of work involved

From the 31 respondents, 7 (23%) were academicians who are having a vision for Smart Cities and coming from a relatable background, 12 (39%) were town and country/ city planners who are having a vision for Smart Cities and working in the public sector and the rest (39%) were the town and country/ city planners who are having a vision for Smart Cities and working in the private sector. The percentages are shown in Figure 3.3;

Type of the organisation the respondents represented



Academicians Planners working in public sector Planners working in private sector

Figure 3.3: Type of the organisations the respondents of the Questionnaire Survey represented

# Years of experience of the respondents

Although the Smart City concept is quite novel to the Sri Lanka, one can argue that the experience matters in order to have a vision for Smart Cities. However, the planners having more than 25+ years was difficult to find and the responded planners regardless of their experience provided quality answers with justifications. Therefore, the sample consists of a mix of short and long years of work experience. Table 3.2 represents the working experience of the respondents;

Table 3.2: Years of experience of the respondents involved in the Questionnaire Survey

Role of	Working experience (in years)						
respondents	5-10	11-15	11-20	21-25	25+		
Academicians	-	-	57%	14%	29%		
Planners from public sector	33%	50%	8%	8%	-		
Planners from private sector	67%	33%	-	-	-		

While Sri Lanka is still in the process of developing Smart Cities, most of the local professionals involved in the SMCPC and other smart initiatives in cities work in the public sector as planners as the Sri Lankan government is the major client. Some of the planners who responded and are working in the private sector have worked in overseas Smart City projects as well. Mostly the academicians who responded take part in different research groups related to Smart Cities/ city planning and some of them are engaged as advisors in the emerging Smart City projects in Sri Lanka. It was seen that the professionals directly engaged in emerging Smart Cities in Sri Lanka as planners are mostly less experienced in work yet having a vision for Smart Cities are dynamic professionals.

# Questionnaire survey template design

The questionnaire only included closed ended questions; i.e. the themes, subthemes and indicators in the system. They were distributed both as hardcopies and softcopies depending on the convenience of the respondents. The respondents were supposed to evaluate the significant using the principles in "Battelle method". In the Battelle method, which is common as a tool in Environmental Impact Assessment, a Parameter Importance Unit (PIU) is defined which is given as a whole number that needs to be shared among the indicators by user of the framework (Wagh, 2014). The shared value of PIU reflects the relative importance of each parameter. In this study the relative importance of each theme, subtheme and indicator can be assessed with the average relative weights each of them obtained.

#### 3.3 Data analysis

The first part of the study, only being depended on a single case study attempted an in-depth analysis of the interview findings. The gathered data was analysed manually with content analysis and followed by a discussion based on pattern matching. According to Easterby-Smith, Thorpe, & Jackson (2012) content analysis is an analysis technique where the researchers interrogate research data to constructs ideas which have been decided quite in advance. Likewise, the data obtained from the questionnaire was analysed with mean score method.

According to Yin (2003), in seeking for evidences that address the initial proposition of the research, the analysis helps to reconstruct the data in a meaningful way. In order to analyse the data to a meaningful form, Ryan and Bernard (2003), came up with two main methods, that is through word base and code base analysis. In code base data analysis method, collected data is linked to prior established codes or researcher derived codes whereas in the word base data analysis method relationships are encouraged to emerge from the interviewees' responses, instead of researcher forcefully creating the relationships (Kumar, 2019). However, both the approaches alone have their limitations (Zamawe, 2015), and therefore for this study they are used together. Accordingly, the initial analysis is done with content analysis and thereafter cognitive mapping is used for an in-depth analysis. For better familiarization with data, researcher has analyzed data manually. With analysis carried out at the end of the case study a system which is suitable to the SMCPC in Sri Lanka was produced. This has been next taken to the industry to assess the suitability to be applied in the general Sri Lankan context. There the relative weightage for each indicator in the system were ranked using the average score each indicator obtains through the Battelle scoring approach. Therewith a scoring system is developed to be used as a guide in determining objectives for Smart Cities in general Sri Lankan context.

#### Validation

As the topic is a seldom researched, data generalization was done with pattern matching. Adhering to Yin (2014)'s study, the findings which are limited to the views of a small group of people can be generalized to a wider community of researchers through matching the theoretical validity. Pattern matching ensures the validation of data with a theory-based testing (Yin, 2014).

### **3.4 Research Process**

The research design is applied so that suitable research methods are used to ensure the attainment of the objectives set out in Chapter One as shown in Figure 3.4;

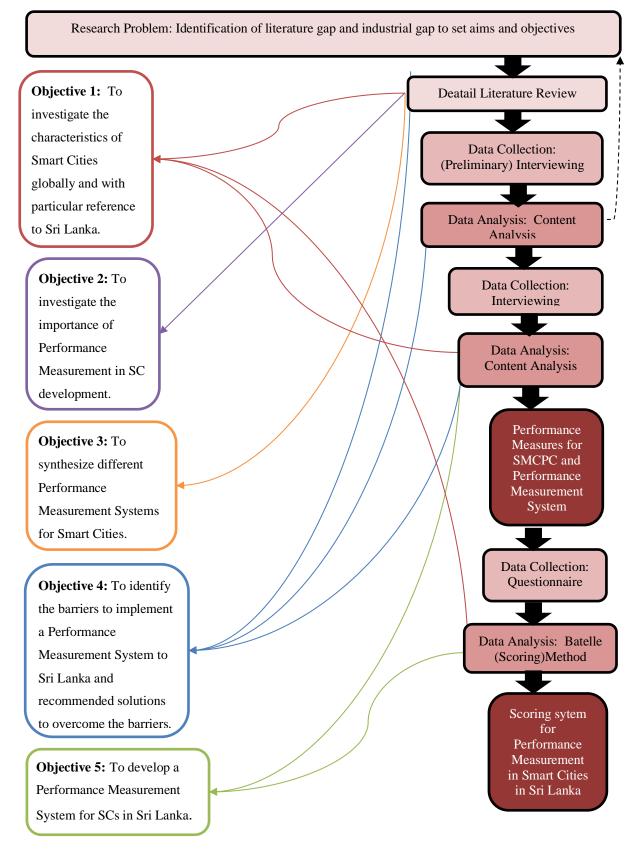


Figure 3.4: Research Process of the study

Figure 3.4 depicts how different research strategies were used throughout the research to accomplish different research problems in form of research objectives. At the end of each analysis stage except for the preliminary interview stage, a system was developed, as shown.

#### 3.5 Summary

This chapter designs how the research methodology of this study should be carried out to achieve the objectives. Both qualitative and quantitative research choices were selected depending on the type of the research question. Selected research strategies were surveys and case studies. Data were collected by interviewing and through a questionnaire. While the qualitative data were analyzed with content analysis and cognitive mapping quantitative data were collected and assessed administering Battelle method. Case study findings were validated with pattern matching. Finally, the research process is shown to summarize the plan of work.

# **CHAPTER 04**

# DATA ANALYSIS

#### 4.1 Introduction

Chapter dissects research findings generated from the data collected by interviewing professionals involved in the proposed Smart City Project in Colombo Port City (SMCPC). Most of the findings originated in the literature review chapter conceived the basis for interview guidelines. The analysis is structured in a way comprehensive system are developed at each stage of data collection. Thereupon objectives are discussed with pattern matching approach, for bye the Performance Measurement System.

#### Stage 1: Findings of preliminary interviews

#### 4.2 Case Study Description

According to the Port City Project Director (P1) "the dream of the creators of Port City is to make it a sustainable addition to the City of Colombo, generating business, tourism and a place with high quality life, which goes in well with the definitions/ definitional elements/ characteristics of a Smart City". This as a new city is supposed to be well connected to and integrated with the existing city of Colombo. In terms of the location, Port City is located along the 21<sup>st</sup> century maritime silk road, is a key link between the east and West, offers access to a thriving region poised for accelerated growth. Spanning for 269 hectares, CPC when developed will have a total of gross floor area for more than 5.65 million square meters. P2 added that "most importantly Port City will be the pioneer in developing Smart Cities in Sri Lanka, where IT expertise using cloud computing and the latest cutting-edge technology creates a seamless living environment, making smart living, smart working and smart estate management a reality". According to P4 "it has adopted the latest sustainable city concepts which emphasis a people friendly environment". It uses the Transit Oriented Development concept to minimize commuting and enhances project's sustainability goals. The ultimate goal is to make Port City the

most liveable city and the most desired travel destination; ideally a world class city in the South Asian Region. However, as per P1, the Smart City feature/ characteristics are not exactly established as yet. Yet the Port City is definitely being developed to facilitate all available Smart City feature. Therefore, the respondents in unison bear the opinion that most of the state of art features and the future developments thereafter will get going within the environment the Port City has created. Figure 4.1 shows a birdeye view of the Colombo Port City Project



### Figure 4.1: Birdeye view of the Colombo Port City Project

One of the main features of the new city will be the high quality of public spaces and residential environment. Port City is preplanned to be sectored into main 5 divisions, namely, marina, central park living, port city CBD, international island and living island, having a comparatively small distance from North to South at 2km and East to West at 2km. In other words, an entity of 500 acres land. Each of these areas will have plots for living with different characteristics. For instance, in marina all the houses get the view of sea, and the housing facilities will go along with the marina. Likewise, northern end ends with a canal. P3 added "the housing quality of space differs in villa compound, park living, marina, etc." A new LRT (Light Rail Transit) line will be built by 2023 with which transportation network are to be broaden. Further, the roads are to be connected to the existing express ways. The city management will not be done by the Colombo Municipal Council to which the city is related, but by a high-class city management company and a separate law will be established. The financial city is planned to be developed by the investor company itself. The international school, international convention centre and international

hospital draws a major attention and have call for bidding. The state of art convention and exhibition centre is capable of hosting large scale international events.

The government of Sri Lanka is actively working on turning this city in to an international financial city. With new commercial legislation modeled after British laws, coupled with preferential tax, custom, immigration, regulations and many other attractive policies, Port City is designed to attract global talent and top multinational corporations. However, every plot in Port City is built by someone, it's not a land freely available. Therefore, a certain cost is involved for each centimeter of the land in the project. As far as human development strategies and policies are concerned, human attitudes need to be developed to achieve an innovation driven knowledge-based economy.

When the respondents were asked about the extent to which they can contribute and reveal information, they have said that except for the statistics and extremely confidential data they can disclose the rest. In fact, at a glance on the drafted Performance Measurement System they believed that the research can richly proceed without such information.

# **4.3 Importance of implementing a Performance Measurement System to Sri** Lankan Smart Cities

In asking about the enablers and barriers of the application of a Performance Measurement System to Sri Lanka, the experts replied with justifications which are shown as a cognitive map in the following analysis. The barriers will be analysed and listed out for the reference in the next round where solutions were asked. Therefore, that will be analysed together under the case study results. The following Figure 4.2 illustrated the enablers as a cognitive map;

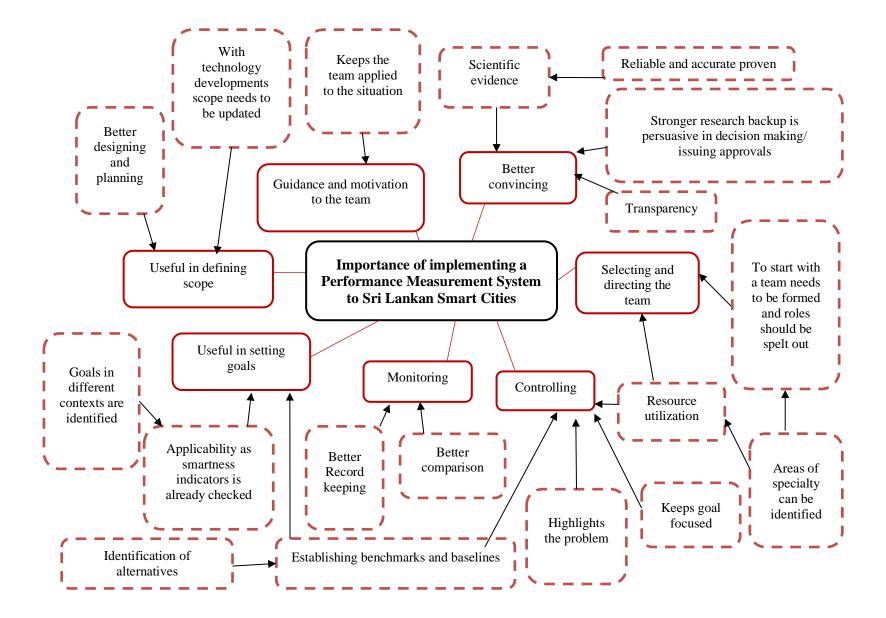


Figure 4.2: Cognitive map on the importance of implementing a Performance Measurement System to Sri Lankan Smart Cities

According to P3 "a project is known to be more reliable and accurate when it is backed by scientific evidence. There is a higher chance of obtaining the approvals easier for that project with compared to the situation without a supporting research". P1 added, "stronger research backed up project is a favorable reception" thereby it is easy to convince the authorities as well as general public regarding critical decisions that needs to be made affecting different parties in the society. One example P2 given was " if this research can show that using nature based green infrastructure indicates the smartness of Port City Smart City project and mandating that from a regulatory framework is doubtful for the policy makers due to the higher cost involved, the research can supersede and they at least will tend to evaluate them with the alternatives". Similarly, as the project is still in the planning stage, Performance Measurement System can be used in setting goals. Through the research, potential goals that were used around the world are evaluated against the Port City context and the most suitable goals in form of the smartness indicators are summarized in the detailed framework. P4 adding his views said "If the policy makers are happy to proceed, measurability of the goals is only what they need to look into thereafter". Similarly, when the goals are established benchmarks/ baselines too can be established. Subsequently the comparison of the actuals and goals can be done so as to address the gaps and required improvements. According to P1 "this Performance Measurement System would be a good starting point, as the completion of this project is not in near future. The smart initiatives we should look at now most probably will not be suitable in another few years' time. So, this smartness criteria might change with the time or in other words with the development of technology. Yet, with visionaries this study tries to establish certain long-term goals which goes in line with the planned city. Therefore, obviously this system as a futuristic study would be a guideline define the scope with available plans". For the same reason, a team of smart experts and required resources needs to be in place prior planning. P1 said "While the areas of specialty are in a great variety, such areas can be identified with this study, not only to human resources, this applies to the other resources as well".

In this case, smart features are planned to incorporate in to newly built city. The newly built city (Port City) thereby will be built having a basic idea about the smart initiatives that needs to be facilitated with the urban infrastructure. However, the making a city smart starts right with from the city planning stage. One example is green certification, for that the services installation and use of green material has to be decided in the planning stage. To decide on such procedures and construction methods in the basic city, smart features should also be agreed.

#### Stage 2: Case study findings

# **4.4 Suitability of the listed Performance Measures (from literature) to SMCPC**

The comprehensive list of Performance Measures that was produced following the literature review was given to the interviewees to assess its suitability in the SMCPC context. Accordingly, expert opinion was obtained for the below key components related to Smart City Performance Measurement.

- Smart economy
- Smart People
- Smart Living
- Smart Governance
- Smart Environment
- Smart Mobility
- Propagation

There were few generic observations that were noticed from the expert opinions. One of the major observations were the approval of all the themes. Although the subthemes and indicators were added, removed and modified, no changes were done to the seven themes. Out of the main changes, obvious changes such as currency change and the population unit changes were done even before taking the list of Performance Measures to the experts. The approach including the changes taken can be illustrated as the below Figure 4.3;

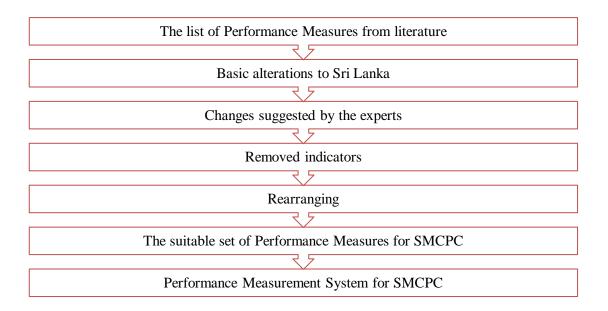


Figure 4.3: Development process of the Performance Measurement System for SMCPC

All the other modifications are shown under each of theme and categorized as changes suggested by the experts, added indicators, removed indicators and rearranging. Rearranging involved the changes suggested by experts to the order and placement of certain indicators/ subthemes. The following analysis contains cognitive maps under each theme which shows the modifications with a colour coding under the aforementioned categorisations. The themes smart economy, smart people, smart living, smart governance, smart environment and smart mobility are analysed likewise. However, as none of the experts did any modification on propagation theme, it is not included in the analysis.

# 4.4.1 Smart Economy

Figure 4.4 illustrated the modifications suggested by the experts to make the listed Performance Measures a suitable and applicable one for the SMCPC under the smart economy theme. An initial discussion with literature was done under 2.62 The Most Significant Themes/ Dimensions in a Performance Measurement Performance Measurement System Framework for a smart city Smart City: Smart Economy.

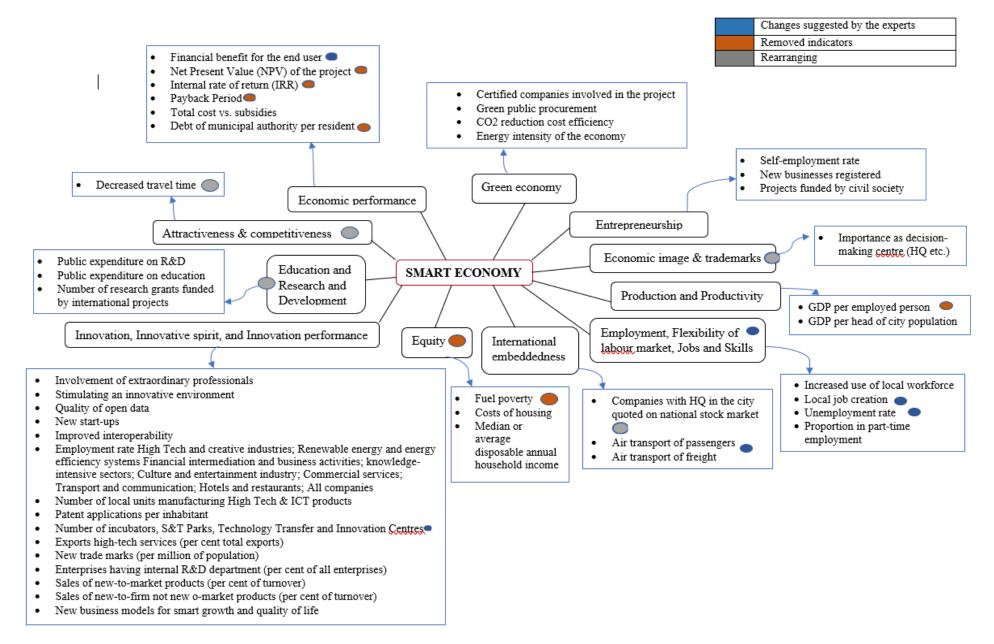


Figure 4.4: Modifications for the listed Performance Measures under Smart Economy theme

In terms of economic developments, in the process of calling Port City an international financial city, the regional rivalry, except from Singapore, is surprisingly not found. "That shows the potential of Port City to contribute to the country's economic growth. "Sri Lanka has already become the "choice of destination" due to the increasing growth rate in Business Process Outsourcing (BPO) and Information Technology Outsourcing (ITO) sectors" I10 mentioned. According to A.T. Kearney's Global Services Location Index (GSLI) 2019, Sri Lanka is ranked as the 25<sup>th</sup> location that can best provide business process outsourcing (BPO), information technology (IT), and voice services based on countries' financial attractiveness, business environment, skills and availability of its people, etc. This is a consecutive winning after having been ranked in many other indexes since the Outsourcing Destination of the Year 2013 title, awarded by the National Outsourcing Association (NOA), UK.

As the Smart City framework in Sri Lanka is developed by a Chinese Company, one of the Consultants working for Chinese Smart Cities (115) has talked about how the Chinese influence can impact SC in PC; "In the Chinese framework of Smart Cities, the Government initiates and takes care of the basics, strategists from citizens' end can contribute and develop whatever beyond the basics". In other words, if the basic data in a city is captured and connected in real time, citizen can get the benefit of that data and explore the potentials of development in the basic Smart City network which the Government facilitate. This can contribute to the individual company growth as well as the economic growth of the country. However, this depends on the delivering of open Smart City APIs (open Application Programming Interface). Based on that most of the services can be enhanced. One example brought out by I9 is greenhouse gas emission data contributing to improve different aspects of transportation such on cycling and the related ecosystem.

Many experts have argued regarding the projects funded by the civil society. Despite, there are examples like Melbourne Smart City where an open API which contains a wide range of rich data that can instigate creative projects to emerge from public; at this moment that cannot be predicted in the CPC case. In fact, investor's threshold is really low due to the lower population. Alternatively, the Estate Management

Company (EMC) which manages the CPC collects taxes from general public. Amidst all the objections, I8 gave a rather impartial comment on that indicator "In a situation where this company develop an app to provide city wide smart solutions, that can be termed as a project funded by the civil society", justifying the relevance of the indicator.

While the financial benefit for the end user was commonly accepted, I8 and I13 suggested to rephrase it as 'financial benefit for the stakeholders' as the benefits are not only limited to the end users. One example brought in by I1 regarding this is the indirect financial benefits gained by different stakeholders due to smart waste management solutions; "smart waste management involves a systematic procedure starting from collecting waste from bins which are installed with sensors that gives alerts when they are filled. This alert should be communicated to the municipal authority which collects the waste and send the waste to categorization. The garbage truck will go in a specified routine about which the residences are aware and they get notifications when the truck is coming. While the end users find the convenience more than financial benefits, it is the government (EMC) that gets rewarded with financial benefits."

When it comes to a SMCPC there are two aspects; one is infrastructure management and the next one is operations and smart solutions for the operations. In other words, digitalization of the operations. With that we have two layers on which these services are offered to the public. When public is known as the "Consumer", the two layers are "Business" to "Consumer" and "Business" to "Business" to "Consumer". For now, it is an operation specific Smart City with the Business to Consumer provisions, Command and Control Centre will manage them. The rest of the services, which is termed as "Business" to "Business" to "Consumer" is encouraged to be developed by the plot owners. As a result, the respondents raised concerns with regards to the indicators like number of incubators, Science and Technology (S&T) parks, technology transfer and innovation centres as they are not there in the initial plan but can be most likely developed by the plot owners. However, considering the futuristic use, researcher has decided to keep the potential developments that are possible to be undertaken by plot owner, allowing the experts to remove them depending on the applicability, in the coming round.

While the CPC is said to be a transit-oriented development, international movement would definitely be there. Air transport of passengers and air transport of freight therefore are obvious indicators. However, the experts' suggestion was to combine them too as them separately doesn't give a significant result to assess.

"At a glance the jobs that might create in CPC are white collar jobs and the labour factor comes to the discussion only during the infrastructure/ building construction" said I3. In fact, in Sri Lanka the local skilled labour force is in a scarcity. Having similar views I1 mentioned "the current trend of the employers/ constructors is to export labour from India or China at a lower cost. Therefore, unless this trend discontinues having an indicator on labour might deviate the true interpretation of the smartness". Therefore, the experts suggested to remove the "labor force" from the subtheme 'Employment, Flexibility of labour market, Jobs and Skills' as it has a least relevance. By the same means, experts recommended to remove the indicator unemployment rate as it is not relevant in CPC case and add employment rate. "The online job creation in CPC is also highly possible, apart from the employers that come to the city to work in established companies; having a significant unemployment rate is long shot" said I7. However, increased use of local workforce and local job creation indicators represent a similar situation where the local workforce is employed by the jobs created by SMCPC, where local job creation is quite an obvious output. Therefore, the indicator local job creation is removed.

The objective of the proposed Smart City in PC is to build the most liveable city and the most desired travel destination; ideally a world class city in the South Asian Region. As a result, most of the interviewees commented the irrelevance of a positive NPV, IRR or a lower payback period as indicators of smartness in CPC. I14 added "The services that you need to improve the ease of doing business index even will not show any direct return. Calculating the NPV will also be a challenging. However, the utility and service (outsourced) providers will calculate for their benefit, for the project having direct and indirect returns measuring these aspects are tough. Usually for the government/ EMC this might not be a revenue generating project, when they are doing it to increase the quality of life of people." However, as the financial performance calculated by the utility and service (outsourced) providers or any other interested party again shows the financial benefits different stakeholders achieve, those three indicators were removed.

In simple terms the indicators like 'debt of municipal authority per resident' and 'fuel poverty' are not relevant to CPC. I14 adding her views said "For the services provision, service charges are obtained from the public. In the usual case, in Sri Lanka for a person government subsidize most of the services and even for a tourist (backpacker) the burden for service provision lies with the government. However, in CPC government will not subsidize likewise and as a result service charges will be relatively high". Yet that cannot be considered as a debt. Similarly, SMCPC is designed for luxury living with compared to most of the other parts in Sri Lanka. When considering the target residential/commercial group only those who can afford for that living will come. I4 mentioned a similar view "There will be no equity issue inside the city but if compared with the Colombo city there can be differences". Therefore, equity will not be a part of SMCPC objectives and measuring it will deviate the purpose of the Performance Measurement System. Although this subtheme was removed the applicable indicators, costs of housing and median or average disposable annual household income will be included under a different theme (smart living). Similarly, attractiveness and competitiveness subtheme were mentioned under smart living as suggested by the experts.

Some experts have commented on the indicator "importance as decision-making centre (HQ etc.)" which was included under both the subthemes economic image and trademarks and international embeddedness with slightly different phrasing. However, the experts I7 and I13 said "it should have been included under productivity subtheme as having the headquarters located in the city itself contributes to productivity through fast decision making and actions". Therefore, they were included under productivity subtheme and removed from previous subthemes. Consequently, economic image and trademarks subtheme was also removed; as per

I5 "economic image and trademarks is anyway covered by smart economy theme itself".

According to the experts it is very unlikely that any tangible manufacturing/ production in large scale would happen in the Smart City. Therefore, GDP will encompass the intangible productions, outsourced professional services, etc. Nevertheless, measuring GDP as a smartness indicator has confused the experts, as per I4 "this cannot be taken as a smartness indicator, as in Middle East there are certain countries where the GDP is high even without a Smart City". However, I10 provided a solution, "may be what should be considered is the GDP of certain smart service sectors." Having that as an option, the indicators were rewritten. However, as GDP per employed person and GDP per head of city population both gave similar indications only one (GDP per head of city population) is kept.

#### 4.4.2 Smart People

Figure 4.5 illustrated the modifications suggested by the experts to make the listed Performance Measures a suitable and applicable one for the SMCPC under the smart people theme. An initial discussion with literature was done under 2.62 The Most Significant Themes/ Dimensions in a Performance Measurement Performance Measurement System for a Smart City.

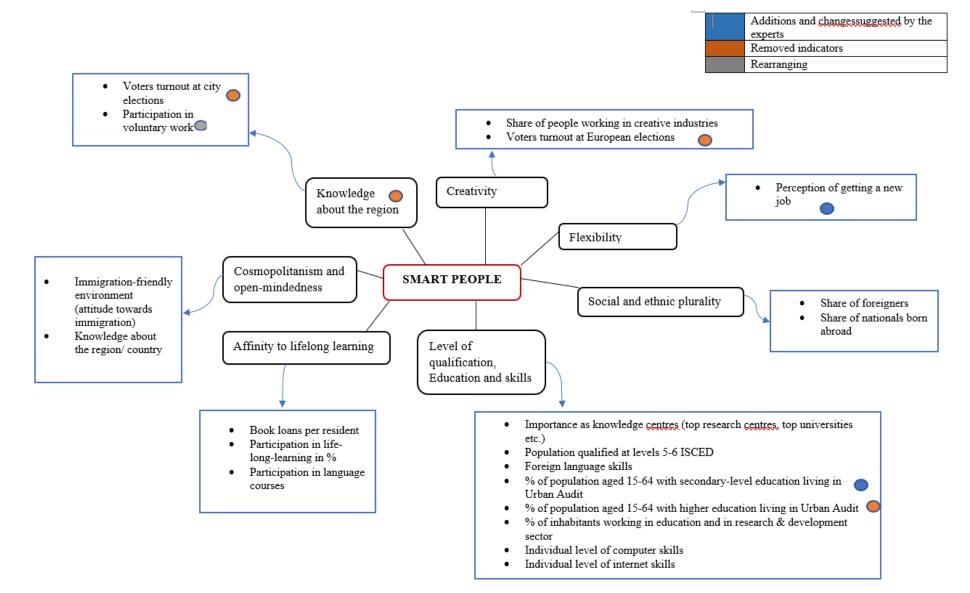


Figure 4.5: Modifications for the listed Performance Measures under Smart People theme

Despite the population, Chinese Smart Cities are known to be smarter and efficient than most of the other counterparts in the world. One of the Chinese respondents, I8, who is work in CPC says "in China we strive to cut down lines and save our time as the saved time and satisfaction are two great things you benefit from a Smart City. One strategy we use commonly is Cash-less transactions. To increase efficiency in systems mostly the systems are digitalized and integrated. Mostly in subways payments are done with face to cut down lines/ queues. Most of these can be done in Sri Lanka as well but what matters is the per square meter cost for digital infrastructure". Assuming the evaluation turns out to be profitable this suggestion is included as an indicator. However, as cashless transactions are not very common in the Sri Lankan public service the citizens will have to be flexible enough to bear the initial inconvenience and be corporative. Therefore, the indicator is included under flexibility subtheme. In fact, flexibility of Sri Lankans as well as the foreigners who interact with Sri Lankan businesses is quite important to a SMCPC as it stands different to other cities in Sri Lanka. Voluntary work is a result of the flexibility as they will always be an option amidst the busy lives as city dwellers. Subsequently the two indicators under the knowledge about the region subtheme is removed and knowledge about the region under the subtheme cosmopolitanism and openmindedness is kept.

The urban audit refers here to the European Commission sponsored project which is developed to provide comparable data on urban areas. For an instance, Urban Audit 2010- 2012, comprises 185 main variables and further derived figures for the UK. According to I11, "a similar database should be maintained for CPC as well, in fact, having a newly established city collecting most of the data is not difficult, therefore, there's a greater chance of having an urban audit for SMCPC". As a result, the indicators that refers to an urban audit are not removed.

ISCED is a mapping system that maps national education systems according to the International Standard Classification of Education (ISCED). Levels 5-6 in ISCED is equivalent to the bachelor's degree or equivalent level/ Short-cycle tertiary education (Higher National Diploma in Engineering – HNDE/ Higher National Diploma in Accountancy- HNDA/ National Diploma in Technology) which the experts accepted

in unison as a satisfactory level to measure educational qualifications. In terms of educational qualifications, the other two indicators found are the percentage of population aged 15-64 with secondary-level education living in Urban Audit and the percentage of population aged 15-64 with higher education living in Urban Audit. Without keeping the two indicators separately they were combined and formed an indicator as the percentage of population aged 15-64 with secondary-level and above education living in Urban Audit.

Voters turnout at elections is also gained attention of many respondents. As per I13, "this is not a good indicator as the level of participation not always show the level of satisfaction or level of performance of governing bodies". While the majority of analysts hold a view that the participation is an indication of the degree of interest the city dwellers have towards government this in certain cases can differ and end up as an indicator that imply that the dissatisfied population with its local government's actions and leadership. Moreover, as the voting procedure in CPC is still vague and would not be a prominent factor even if disregarded in this stage. Therefore, the indicators are removed from the Performance Measurement System.

#### 4.4.3 Smart Living

Figure 4.6 illustrated the modifications suggested by the experts to make the listed Performance Measures a suitable and applicable one for the SMCPC under the smart living theme. An initial discussion with literature was done under 2.62 The Most Significant Themes/ Dimensions in a Performance Measurement Performance Measurement Systemfor a Smart City.

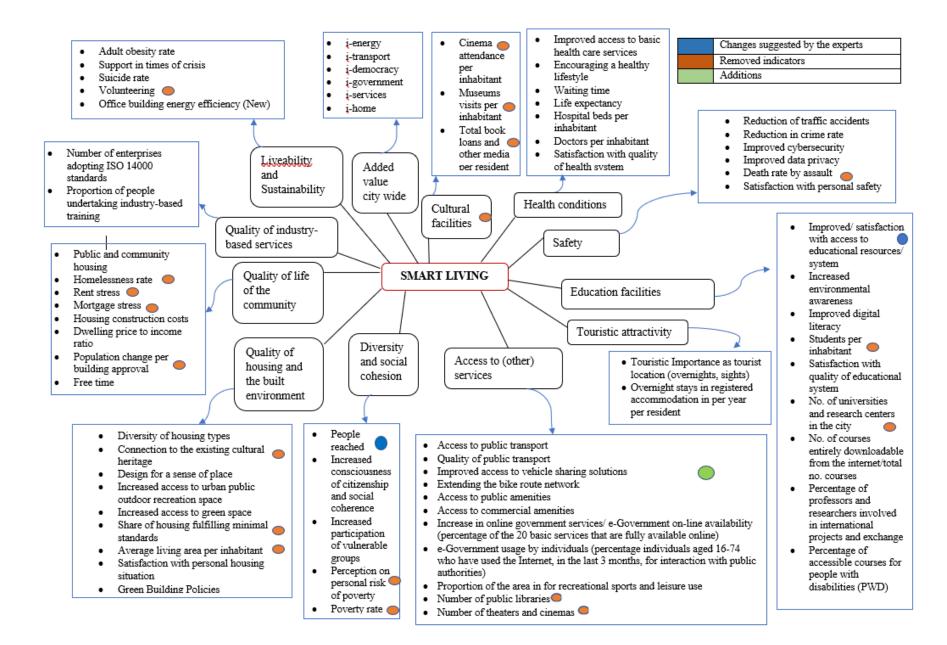


Figure 4.6: Modifications for the listed Performance Measures under Smart Living theme

The aspects in smart living are labelled as the most important criteria that pose the competitive advantage in CPC project. I4 explaining said "Most high demanding communities in the business world before investing/ migrating to the city search the other living factors like quality residential facilities, international level healthcare sector and schools, etc. for their families". Therefore, they need to be fulfilled first in order to attract such outstanding communities. Smart living should therefore incorporate all such attributes. Therefore, smart living especially in this project needs a significant deal of attention. As a result, a number of facilities will be available. However, a museum is not there in the CPC plan so far. Therefore, the indicator museums visits per inhabitant is removed. One another indicator under the subtheme cultural facilities, total book loans and other media per resident is also removed as it is included under smart people theme. The leftover indicator cinema attendance per inhabitant was also criticized for being irrelevant for SMCPC as the nature of city will make cinema as a secondary option to its citizens more often than not. That being the situation, a comparison with another Smart City could mislead the reader with regards to city's smartness. Therefore, that indicator was also removed.

Time saving is one of the key aspects that is looked at in making a city smart. The smart living theme in most respondents' view is about making city life efficient and satisfying. In the process of doing that waiting time and queues is something that should be cut off from in citizens' routines while obtaining services. Although the majority of experts suggested to include it under this subtheme reducing queues was mentioned under smart governance. Similarly decreased travel time is included as an indicator under the same subtheme.

In terms of additions, Autonomous driving is added under access to services subtheme. Explaining the new jargon I3 said "you're going from owning an asset to sharing an asset. A trend has come to a certain level in Sri Lanka, but still there are drivers. In order to make this happen in Sri Lanka, a lot of other things needs attention. For instance, infrastructure need to be developed and so are roads and road designs". In other words, with the introduction of futuristic provisions like use of robotics and service delivering without human conduction there should be an

integrated and strong infrastructure network. Therefore, such indicators represent a next level development as the main development needs support networks.

Safety is another key term that most of the experts have raised their concerns on. One reason for this attention was the recent "Easter attack" bomb blasting that has been taken place by holding the government and authorities in guilt and responsible. The latter investigations showed that the terrorists were nurtured due to the lack of attention paid on island wide security measures, which definitely should be prevented to take place in CPC. I7 once commented that "every context has to know what version of Smart City they need, for instance, for Sri Lanka, from my point of view, it should be more security driven or rather a safe connected city that actually help people live without fear". Adding to that I2 stated "More or less safety-oriented expectations are covered through the indicators. But there's no point mentioning the ways you can commit a crime one by one". Therefore, the indicator death rate by assault is removed.

The two indicators improved/ satisfaction with access to educational resources/ system and satisfaction with quality of educational system had similar meanings and therefore the first indicator was changed as improved access to educational resources. Under the same subtheme there were another two indicators on which the experts commented solemnly. They were students per inhabitant and number of universities and research centers in the city. While the main focus of the city is more towards commercial operations, education is considered to be an important support system especially to the city dwellers who have settled with their families and looking for an internationally standardized education for their children. Having provisions for that the initial PC plan includes an international school at its best level. This school will be an accredited and outstanding in the South Asian region where no rivalry is expected. As a result, the number of schools will be very low. Although the initial plan doesn't include any university, few private universities might be operated. However, the number of students learning in those institutions might be low when compared to the professions of other city dwellers. Commenting on such situations 112 stated that "if the number of students is significantly low or high as a proportion of total number of city occupants it would not be a good indicator". This same

applied to the number of universities and research centers, cinemas, public libraries in the city. Therefore, those indicators were removed.

Most of the experts were confused of the indicator people reached and they have specified that is should be expressed in a clearer way. Indicator refers to the participation of the entire group of a service where the project is called successful when the 100% is attended. One example I9 used was "car owners of all electrical cars join to a programme with which the energy system efficiency is planned to be improved". Accordingly, the indicator was changed as the percentage of people in the target group that have been reached and/or are activated by 5 services in the project, where the 5 services and target group of the audience needs to be predefined as the SMCPC objectives are confirmed.

The CPC which aims a luxurious living is targeted at the group of investors who can afford that life. Therefore, the financial burden which is involved in acquiring a residence should not be a problem to the citizens and it is expected a same social class in the whole city. Therefore, the indicators like perception on personal risk of poverty, poverty rate, share of housing fulfilling minimal standards, homelessness rate, rent stress, mortgage stress will not be there and therefore are not relevant for this particular project.

Moreover, the city is built newly and will not have any type of a cultural heritage. Adding to this I10 says "as the city is attached to Colombo city there can be connected routes to existing cultural heritages yet that doesn't seem to be case specified, there are other important indicators". by similar means the newly built city consisted of a limited number of plots and the living area is similar in saleable lands. As per the experts, having an indicator as the average living area per inhabitant is not inessential. The other indicator that seek the attention of experts was the population change per building approval. It is no doubt that higher the number of building approvals get, higher the buildings built to occupy a higher number of building users. However, with the limited space more buildings might not be practical. Therefore, the indicator is removed due to the irrelevance.

# **4.4.4 Smart Governance**

Figure 4.7 illustrated the modifications suggested by the experts to make the listed Performance Measures a suitable and applicable one for the SMCPC under the smart governance theme. An initial discussion with literature was done under 2.62 The Most Significant Themes/ Dimensions in a Performance Measurement Performance Measurement System for a Smart City.

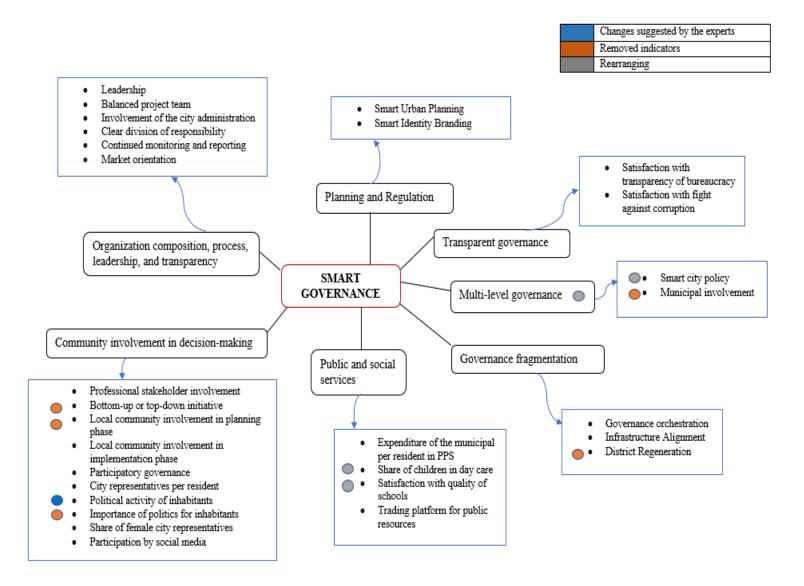


Figure 4.7: Modifications for the listed Performance Measures under Smart Governance theme

For city management purpose in the CPC, a separate entity is planned to be formed. This entity which is known as EMC includes service provision, service management and maintenance. According to the tripartite agreement between Project Company, Ministry (Government of Sri Lanka) and Urban Development Authority, EMC consisted of 51% share of Sri Lankan government and 49% share of the project company. As the Port City is being developed in order to facilitate a Smart City or in other words as the Smart City in CPC is a newly built Smart City, the planning of it doesn't involve citizens. "In the planning stage we are not aware about who will occupy this land; however, planning needs to proceed without the community involvement" says I4. Adding to that the experts agreed in unison that the community involvement is important and at least they should be involved in the implementation stage. Out of different approaches, for SMCPC it is the top down approach that is being undertaken to establish smart initiatives, as the city dwellers are not identified in the stage where smart initiative were set out. However, the needs are indirectly originated from the bottom layer meaning the general public as they demand them when buying the plots. The civic engagement in establishing the further layers of smart initiatives would be possible with open APIs, yet, that cannot be granted and therefore, the indicator is removed.

The exact fragmentation and role of politics in CPC for the time being is vague. The planned community represents the modern upper-class society and a corporate community which prefers active participation in the processes of urban governance. I11 explaining the fact said "for the corporate world and the land owners who paid a quite a significant sum of money will require to advice, question and provide feedback as community actors in city governance and therefore they will consider it is important to be politically active". Alternatively, 19 thinks that "I doubt as to whether the political activity of inhabitants and importance of politics for inhabitants are good smartness indicators, although participatory governance is". I13 who bore a similar opinion said "they should have voting rights as they symbolize the democracy as the city is based in Sri Lanka, similarly, city representatives per residents would be a good indicator up to a certain extent, but I guess having citizens who are actively involved in politics doesn't indicate the smartness a Smart City".

However, the majority of the experts held a different opinion, I14 commented representing that whole set "unlike most of the Smart Cities SMCPC is built newly for a different group of people which consisted of Sri Lankans as well as foreigners. In the due course, them as city dwellers are those who should be politically active in that particular city and not any outsider". Therefore, the "political activity of inhabitants" indicator is not removed and encouraged to interpret emphasizing the inhabitant's participation in politics (other than for any other outsiders') and not as if the active politics indicated the smartness. As a result, it is changed as "Inhabitants' satisfaction with politics, it is the satisfaction which implies the true importance they give and the stability and good governance. By that means importance of politics for inhabitants is removed. According to I3 who represented the majority of the experts said "the importance will not change in making a city smart".

There are two layers in Smart Cities that the consultant party has raised concerns. The two layers according to I13 are, "city management which is covered by the Estate Management Plan with sample cases and required procedures and the citizen involvement to which a detailed Smart City policy is yet to be set in". The policy makers of SMCPC indeed have a long-term vision towards setting goals for SMCPC. However, since the estimated completion of the project is not in near future, vision on the future of SMCPC should be in a manner that can stimulate the environment for Smart City planning. Therefore, it is included under the "Planning and Regulation" subtheme. With that, Multi-level governance subtheme was left only with the indicator municipal involvement which gives a similar indication to what is mentioned under "organization composition, process, leadership, and transparency" subtheme. Therewith multi-level governance appeared to be similar to governance fragmentation and therefore is removed.

Similarly, share of children in day care and satisfaction with quality of schools are rearranged to be mentioned under the smart living theme. However, as far as the initial plan is concerned, there will be no government schools and day care centres maintained as part of the public services rendered. Meanwhile the expenditure of the municipal per resident for acquiring public and social services can indicate the smartness of the governance in SMCPC. Further to that having a trading platform for public resources just like in China case is most likely to happen as specified by I15. In fact, that was appreciated by many experts.

### 4.4.5 Smart Environment

Figure 4.8 illustrated the modifications suggested by the experts to make the listed Performance Measures a suitable and applicable one for the SMCPC under the smart environment theme. An initial discussion with literature was done under 2.62 The Most Significant Themes/ Dimensions in a Performance Measurement Performance Measurement System for a Smart City.

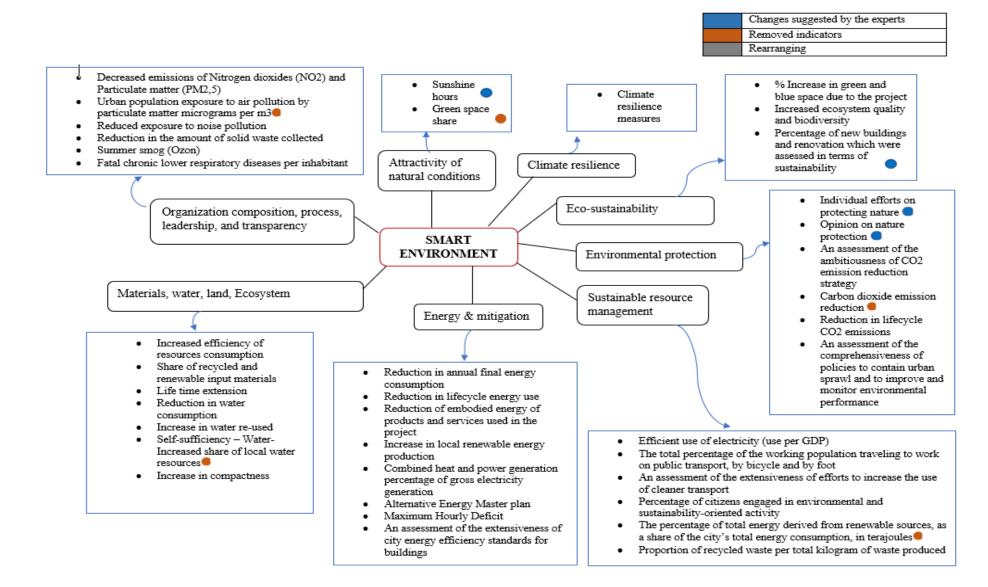


Figure 4.8: Modifications for the listed Performance Measures under Smart Environment theme

Sunshine hours as an indicator of the attractivity of natural conditions is heavily used in countries that have seasons where the sunshine duration per year sometimes is limited. Although sunlight is instrumental in terms of urban design and property values, some experts be of the opinion that it is not really a good smartness indicator. According to I7 "there are cities that have not given up on being a Smart City just because of their limited sunshine duration, what matters is how they utilize the available sources in a smart way". Adding to that I3 mentioned "We have been to Smart Cities where the smart buildings that have automated smart blinds and shading control where the buildings are designed in a way that natural lighting is efficiently brought and therewith less energy is consumed for lighting the building throughout the day time. In that manner, sunshine hours can be a good indicator". While for CPC the sunlight is there throughout the year except for the monsoon periods, the indicator might not be that useful and instead the space for that indicator in the Performance Measurement System can be given to a rather significant indicator. According to the regulatory framework for CPC, all public places should have provisions for solar energy use and the outdoor lighting private places are also encouraged to use solar. Therefore, smart use of the sunshine hours appears to be the indicator that should be there. However, that would be more suitable to be included under the subtheme energy and mitigation. With that the only indicator left under the attractivity of natural conditions is the green space share which is again included as an indicator under Eco-sustainability, therefore, is removed.

As the project is completely newly built there will be no renovation which needs to be assessed in terms of sustainability, therefore, in the indicator percentage of new buildings and renovation which were assessed in terms of sustainability, renovation term is removed. In addition to that the two indicators, individual efforts on protecting nature and opinion on nature protection are combined in to one.

According to the experts, having two separate indicators as Carbon dioxide emission reduction and Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emissions is no use. I6 says "Reduction in lifecycle CO2 includes direct operational CO2 emission. Although the operational emission reduction due to project is important as a smartness indicator, this particular project being a newly built city the comparisons with baselines/ benchmarks would

be misleading. By that means the lifecycle emission would not give any absurd sense." Therefore, only the indicator reduction in lifecycle CO2 emission is kept. Similarly, the indicator increase in local renewable energy production represents what is indicated by the percentage of total energy derived from renewable sources, as a share of the city's total energy consumption, in terajoules, as the renewable energy is anyway derived from renewable sources. Therefore, the indicator under sustainable resource management subtheme is removed.

As per I9, "the project team has not decided about the local water sources in CPC, however, there is an equal chance of using desalinated/treated seawater as well as treated ground water and surface water if the land reclamation consequences allow". Adding I3, "For the time being, water will be an expense to city dwellers with compared to other cities in Sri Lanka". Therefore, having self-sufficiency – water-increased share of local water resources as an indicator might be deceptive.

It is no doubt that a Smart City project having smart objectives towards smart environment should have provisions for preventing air pollution. However, the two indicators urban population exposure to air pollution by particulate matter micrograms per m3 and decreased emissions of particulate matter gives a similar meaning as per the experts while the indicator decreased emissions of particulate matter is more straightforward in practical use of this Performance Measurement System. Therefore, the indicator urban population exposure to air pollution by particulate matter micrograms per m3 is removed.

#### 4.4.6 Smart Mobility

Figure 4.9 illustrated the modifications suggested by the experts to make the listed Performance Measures a suitable and applicable one for the SMCPC under the smart mobility theme. An initial discussion with literature was done under 2.62 The Most Significant Themes/ Dimensions in a Performance Measurement Performance Measurement System for a Smart City.

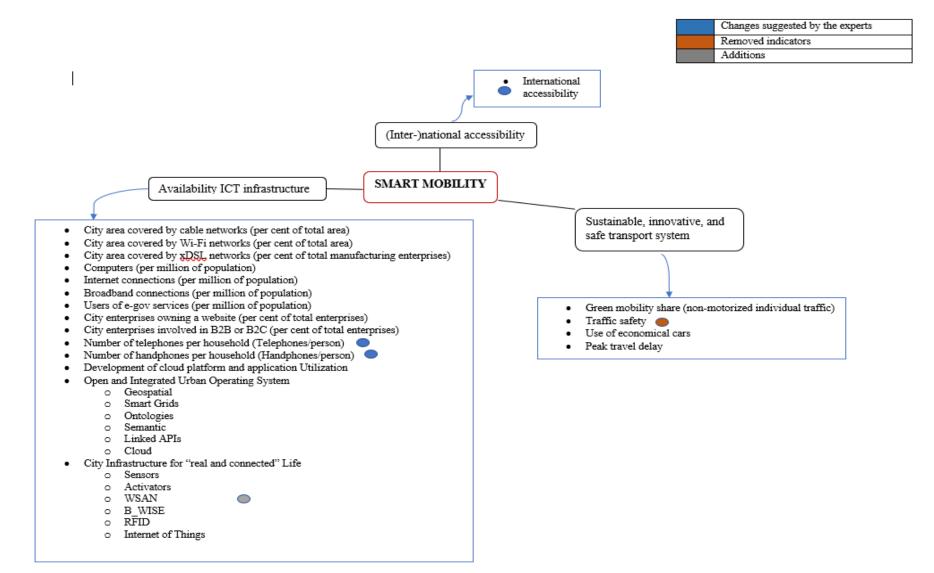


Figure 4.9: Modifications for the listed Performance Measures under Smart Mobility theme

Smart mobility theme was considered an important by many experts as the theme refers to the urban mobility as well as the technology, mobility infrastructure (vehicles, parking, signaling, charging network, etc.), mobility solutions (mobility business framework) and people. The technology component played a significant role in all other subthemes as well. According to 114 "Smart City simply is about the technology integration to increase the efficiency and sustainability of the city". Yet the computing and telecommunications defines mobility with the use of ICT infrastructure. Hence the researcher decided to emphasize the availability and smartness requirements with regards to the ICT infrastructure under this particular theme to which none of the experts opposed.

15 commented "Smart Cities add intelligence to existing urban system making it possible to do more with less; connected applications put real time, transparent information in to the hands of users to help them make better choices". With that terms like artificial intelligence, edge computing, cognitive computing, IoT platforms, mobile internet, cyber security, predictive analytics, digital literacy, etc. come hand in hand. According to the experts who agreed that everything is covered under the subtheme, in designing a Smart City, the three layers; physical and social layer, application layer and adoption and usage layer needs attention. Smart City applications can improve the quality of life indicators. I19 added "for instance, SCADA system for remote monitoring of water consumption and the Bali hotel system where waste water is used for gardening and the blooming of flowers becomes an indicator of hotel occupancy. Real time solutions for urban spaces can prevent fatalities. AI can go to an extent where emotions reading can be used for decision making based on satisfaction and getting an action for security problems customers face inside UBER. In China AI is used at a massive scale together with 5G and 6G". While discussing those provisions I3 and I11 brought in the term "social credit" which is popular in China. As per I11 "One example where it is used is when a person who owes a debt to another person tries to go in a business class when economic class option is there for him is tracked and the app isn't allowing to book the ticket with the social credit system. This is same when face recognition is used to issue toilet papers in public toilets so that citizens don't steal even toilet paper rolls". This new concept was added therewith.

Following that addition few changes were made by combing the two indicators number of telephones per household (telephones/person) and number of handphones per household (handphones/person) to one. Similarly, as traffic safety was previously mentioned, it was removed.

All in all, the Performance Measures listed under the 7 categorisations, Smart Economy, Smart People, Smart Living, Smart Governance, Smart Mobility, Smart Environment and Propagation are discussed in detail with regards to their suitability in the SMCPC. Having Performance Measures in place, the comments on linkages between different Performance Measures, provided a guide in developing the 'Performance Measurement System' for SMCPC. It can be illustrated in Figure 4.10. This Performance Measurement System together with the Performance Measures list represents the suitable system for emerging Smart Cities in Sri Lanka. Figure 4.10 represents only the subthemes; in order to see the indicators under each subtheme, Table 4.1 needs to be referred.

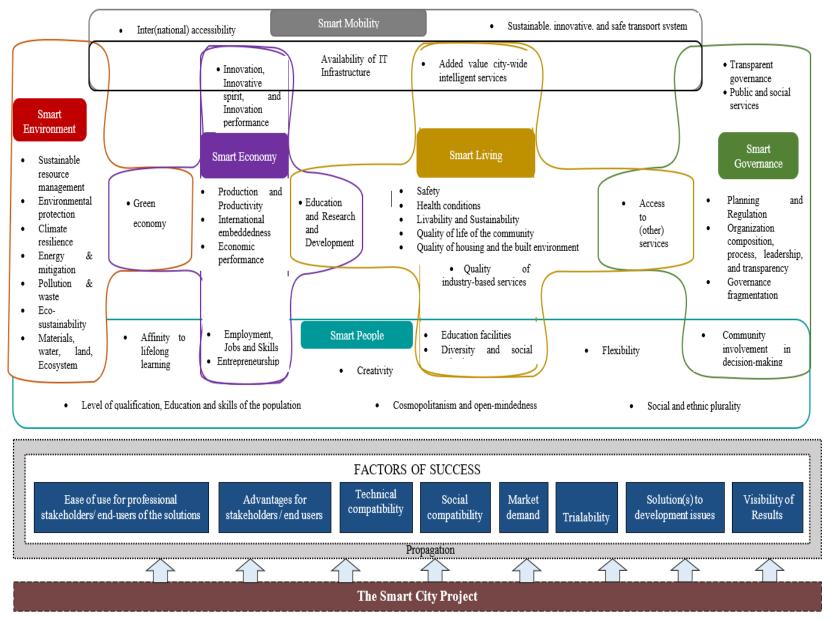


Figure 4.10: Performance Measurement System suitable for Sri Lankan Smart Cities

Theme		Indicators
	1. 12	1. Financial benefit for the stakeholder Total cost savings in euros for a stakeholder per year
	1. 13	2. Involvement of extraordinary professionals The extent to which the project involved professionals normally not encountered in these type of projects- Likert scale
		3. Stimulating an innovative environment The extent to which the project is part of or stimulates an innovative environment- Likert
		<ul> <li>4. Quality of open data <i>The extent to which the quality of the open</i> <i>data produced by the project was increased</i> <i>-number of stars</i></li> </ul>
SMART ECONOMY		<ul> <li>5. New start-ups- number of start-ups resulting from the project</li> <li>6. Improved interoperability- The extent to which the project has increased interoperability between community infrastructures</li> </ul>
SMA		<ul> <li>Fight and the second sec</li></ul>
		<ul> <li>8. Number of local units manufacturing high tech &amp; ICT products</li> <li>9. Patent applications per inhabitant</li> <li>10. Number of incubators</li> <li>11. Number of Science and Technology Parks</li> <li>12. Number of Technology Transfer and Innovation Centres</li> </ul>
		13. Exports high-tech services (as a percentage of total exports)         14. New trade marks         15. Enterprises having internal Research & Development Department (as a percentage

Table 4.1: Performance Measures suitable for Sri Lankan Smart Cities

		of all opterprises)
		of all enterprises) 16. Sales of new-to-market products (as a
		percentage of turnover)
		17. Sales of new-to-firm not new-to-market
		products (as a percentage of turnover)
		18. New business models for smart growth and
		quality of life
		Living Labs
		Creative class
		• Web of Trust
	1.14	19. Self-employment rate
	1. 17	20. New businesses registered
		20. New busilesses registered 21. Percentage of projects funded by civil
		society
	1.15	22. Establishment of important decision-
		making centres (HQ etc.)
		23. GDP (of smart services) per head of city
		population
	1.16	24. Increased use of local workforce
		25. Employment rate
		26. Proportion in part-time employment
	1. 17	27. Air transport of passengers and freight
	1.18	28. Certified companies involved in the project
		29. Green public procurement- <i>Percentage</i>
		annual procurement using environmental
		criteria as share of total annual
		procurement of the city administration
		30. CO2 reduction cost efficiency- Costs per
		<i>ton of CO2 saved per year</i> 31. Energy intensity of the economy
		-gross inland consumption of energy
		divided by GDP
	1.19	32. Public expenditure on R&D
		-percentage of GDP per head of city
		population
		33. Public expenditure on education
		-percentage of GDP per head of city
		population
		34. Number of research grants funded by
	2.8	international projects 35. Leadership- <i>The extent to which the</i>
CE	2.0	leadership of the project is successful in
Ň		creating support for the project Likert
SMART GOVERNANCE		36. Balanced project team - The extent to
/EI		which the project team included all
10		relevant experts and stakeholders from the
ΓC		start- Likert
AR'		37. Involvement of the city administration- The
1		extent to which the local authority is
N.		

other than financial, and how many departments are contributing- Likert           38. Clear division of responsibility- Has the responsibility for achieving the social and sustainability targets been clearly assigned to (a) specific actor(s) in the project? Yes/no           39. Continued monitoring and reporting - The extent to which the progress towards project goals and compliance with requirements is being monitored and reported - Likert           40. Market orientation- The extent to which the project was planned on the basis of a market analysis- Likert           2.9         41. Professional stakeholder involvement- The extent to which professional stakeholders outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution- Likert           2.9         42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which resident/susers have been involved in the implementation process- Likert           43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         9. Share of population participating in online platforms           44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants           46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media           2.10         48. Governance orchestration           49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration           51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources           52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to ob
38. Clear division of responsibility- Has the responsibility for achieving the social and sustainability targets been clearly assigned to (a) specific actor(s) in the project? Yes/no         39. Continued monitoring and reporting - The extent to which the progress towards project goals and compliance with requirements is being monitored and reported-Likert         40. Market orientation- The extent to which the project was planned on the basis of a market analysis-Likert         2.9       41. Professional stakeholder involvement- The extent to which project was planned on the basis of a market analysis-Likert         2.9       42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which project team have been involved in planning and execution-Likert         42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process-Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         55. Satisfaction with transparency of b
2.9       41.       Project was planed on the basis of a market analysis. Likert         2.9       41.       Professional stakeholder involvement in implementation phase. Extent to which the state or involved in planning and execution. Likert         2.9       41.       Professional stakeholder involvement. In the implementation project is being monitored and reported. Likert         2.9       41.       Professional stakeholder involvement. The extent to which the project was planned on the basis of a market analysis. Likert         2.9       41.       Professional stakeholders involvement. The extent to which professional stakeholders outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution. Likert         42.       Local community involvement in implementation process. Likert         43.       Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44.       City representatives per resident         45.       Importance orchestration         49.       Infrastructure Alignment         50.       District Regeneration         2.11       51.       Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52.       Trading platform for public resources       53.         53.       Reduction in waiting time to obtain services       53.         55.       Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy       55.
sustainability targets been clearly assigned to (a) specific actor(s) in the project? Yes/no           39. Continued monitoring and reporting - The extent to which the progress towards project goals and compliance with requirements is being monitored and reported-Likert           40. Market orientation-The extent to which the project was planned on the basis of a market analysis-Likert           2.9         41. Professional stakeholder involvement-The extent to which professional stakeholders outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution-Likert           42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process-Likert           43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms           44. City representatives per resident           45. Importance of plitics for inhabitants           46. Share of female city representatives 47. Participation by social media           2.10         48. Governance orchestration           49. Infrastructure Alignment           50. District Regeneration           43. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services           53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services           55. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
to (a) specific actor(s) in the project? Yes/no           39. Continued monitoring and reporting - The extent to which the progress towards project goals and compliance with requirements is being monitored and reported-Likert           40. Market orientation- The extent to which the project was planned on the basis of a market analysis-Likert           2.9         41. Professional stakeholder involvement- The extent to which professional stakeholder outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution-Likert           2.9         42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process-Likert           43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms           44. City representatives per resident           45. Importance of politics for inhabitants           46. Share of female city representatives           2.10         48. Governance orchestration           2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services           32.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services           32.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
to (a) specific actor(s) in the project? Yes/no           39. Continued monitoring and reporting - The extent to which the progress towards project goals and compliance with requirements is being monitored and reported-Likert           40. Market orientation- The extent to which the project was planned on the basis of a market analysis-Likert           2.9         41. Professional stakeholder involvement- The extent to which professional stakeholder outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution-Likert           2.9         42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process-Likert           43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms           44. City representatives per resident           45. Importance of politics for inhabitants           46. Share of female city representatives           2.10         48. Governance orchestration           2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services           32.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services           32.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
Yes/no           39. Continued monitoring and reporting - The extent to which the progress towards project goals and compliance with requirements is being monitored and reported-Likert           40. Market orientation- The extent to which the project was planned on the basis of a market analysis-Likert           2.9         41. Professional stakeholder involvement- The extent to which project team have been involved in planning and execution-Likert           42. Local community involvement in implementation phase-Extent to which residents/users have been involved in planning and execution-Likert           43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms           44. City representatives per resident           45. Importance of politics for inhabitants           46. Share of female city representatives           47. Participation by social media           2.10         48. Governance orchestration           49. Infrastructure Alignment           50. District Regeneration           2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services           52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services           52. Trading platform for with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
extent to which the progress towards         project goals and compliance with         requirements is being monitored and         reported-Likert         40. Market orientation-The extent to which the         project was planned on the basis of a         market analysis-Likert         2.9         41. Professional stakeholder involvement-The         extent to which professional stakeholders         outside the project team have been involved         in planning and execution-Likert         42. Local community involvement in         implementation phase-Extent to which         residents/users have been involved in the         implementation process-Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of         population participating in online         platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public resources         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Redu
extent to which the progress towards         project goals and compliance with         requirements is being monitored and         reported-Likert         40. Market orientation-The extent to which the         project was planned on the basis of a         market analysis-Likert         2.9         41. Professional stakeholder involvement-The         extent to which professional stakeholders         outside the project team have been involved         in planning and execution-Likert         42. Local community involvement in         implementation phase-Extent to which         residents/users have been involved in the         implementation process-Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of         population participating in online         platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public resources         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Redu
2.9         41. Professional stakeholder involvement is is being monitored and reported - Likert           2.9         41. Professional stakeholder involvement - The extent to which the project was planned on the basis of a market analysis - Likert           2.9         41. Professional stakeholder involvement - The extent to which professional stakeholders outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution - Likert           42. Local community involvement in implementation phase - Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process - Likert           43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms           44. City representatives per resident           45. Importance of politics for inhabitants           46. Share of female city representatives           47. Participation by social media           2.10         48. Governance orchestration           49. Infrastructure Alignment           50. District Regeneration           2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services           52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services           51. Satisfaction with fight against corruption         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
2.9       40. Market orientation- The extent to which the project was planned on the basis of a market analysis- Likert         2.9       41. Professional stakeholder involvement- The extent to which professional stakeholders outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution- Likert         42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process- Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
reported- Likert           40. Market orientation- The extent to which the project was planed on the basis of a market analysis- Likert           2.9         41. Professional stakeholder involvement- The extent to which professional stakeholders outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution- Likert           42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process- Likert           43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms           44. City representatives per resident           45. Importance of politics for inhabitants           46. Share of female city representatives           47. Participation by social media           2.10         48. Governance orchestration           49. Infrastructure Alignment           50. District Regeneration           2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services           52. Trading platform for public resources           53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services           54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
40. Market orientation- The extent to which the project was planned on the basis of a market analysis- Likert         2.9       41. Professional stakeholder involvement- The extent to which professional stakeholders outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution- Likert         42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process- Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureacuracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
project was planned on the basis of a market analysis- Likert           2.9         41. Professional stakeholder involvement- The extent to which professional stakeholders outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution- Likert           42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process- Likert           43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms           44. City representatives per resident           45. Importance of politics for inhabitants           46. Share of female city representatives           47. Participation by social media           2.10         48. Governance orchestration           49. Infrastructure Alignment           50. District Regeneration           2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services           52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services           2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
2.9       41. Professional stakeholder involvement- The extent to which professional stakeholders outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution- Likert         42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process- Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         54. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
2.9       41. Professional stakeholder involvement- The extent to which professional stakeholders outside the project team have been involved in planning and execution- Likert         42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process- Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10       48. Governance orchestration         2.11       51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources       53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12       54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
extent to which professional stakeholders         outside the project team have been involved         in planning and execution-Likert         42. Local community involvement in         implementation phase-Extent to which         residents/users have been involved in the         implementation process-Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of         population participating in online         platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident         for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
0utside the project team have been involved in planning and execution- Likert           42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process- Likert           43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms           44. City representatives per resident           45. Importance of politics for inhabitants           46. Share of female city representatives           47. Participation by social media           2.10         48. Governance orchestration           49. Infrastructure Alignment           50. District Regeneration           2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services           52. Trading platform for public resources           53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services           2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
in planning and execution- Likert         42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process- Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12       54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
in planning and execution- Likert         42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process- Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12       54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
42. Local community involvement in implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process- Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12       54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
implementation phase- Extent to which residents/users have been involved in the implementation process- Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
2.10       43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
implementation process- Likert         43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12       54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
43. Participatory governance % Share of population participating in online platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
populationparticipatinginonlineplatforms44. City representatives per resident45. Importance of politics for inhabitants46. Share of female city representatives47. Participation by social media2.1048. Governance orchestration49. Infrastructure Alignment50. District Regeneration2.1151. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services52. Trading platform for public resources53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services2.1254. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
platforms         44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
44. City representatives per resident         45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
45. Importance of politics for inhabitants         46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
46. Share of female city representatives         47. Participation by social media         2.10         48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
47. Participation by social media         2.10       48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11       51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12       54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
2.10       48. Governance orchestration         49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
49. Infrastructure Alignment         50. District Regeneration         2.11         51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
50. District Regeneration         2.11       51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
50. District Regeneration         2.11       51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
2.11       51. Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
for public and social services         52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
52. Trading platform for public resources         53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12         54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
53. Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         2.12       54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
2.12     54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy       55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
2.12       54. Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy         55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
bureaucracy           55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
55. Satisfaction with fight against corruption
2.13 56. Smart Urban Planning
57. Smart Identity Branding
58. Smart City policy - the extent to which the
project has benefitted from a governmental
Smart City policy- Likert
3.9 59 % Increase in green and blue space due to
The project
60. Increased ecosystem quality and biodiversity- Extent to which ecosystem quality and biodiversity aspects have been
<b>biodiversity</b> - <i>Extent to which ecosystem</i>
a quality and biodiversity aspects have been
Z taken into account- Likert
61. Percentage of new buildings which were
assessed in terms of sustainability

3.10	62. Individual efforts and opinion on protecting
5.10	nature
	63. An assessment of the ambitiousness of
	CO2 emission reduction strategy
	64. Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emissions
	65. An assessment of the comprehensiveness of
	policies to contain urban sprawl and to
	improve and monitor environmental
	performance
3.11	66. Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)
	67. The total percentage of the working
	population traveling to work on public
	transport, by bicycle and by foot 68. An assessment of the extensiveness of
	efforts to increase the use of cleaner
	transport
	69. Percentage of citizens engaged in
	environmental and sustainability-oriented
	activity
	70. Proportion of recycled waste per total
	kilogram of waste produced
3.12	71. Reduction in annual final energy
	consumption
	72. Reduction in lifecycle energy use
	73. Reduction of embodied energy of products and services used in the project
	74. Increase in local renewable energy
	production
	75. Combined heat and power generation
	percentage of gross electricity generation
	76. Alternative Energy Master plan
	77. Maximum Hourly Deficit
	78. An assessment of the extensiveness of city
	energy efficiency standards for buildings
3.13	79. Increased efficiency of resources
	consumption
	80. Share of recycled and renewable input materials
	81. Life time extension- <i>The extent to which</i>
	measures were taken to prolong the service
	lifetime of products - Likert
	82. Reduction in water consumption
	83. Increase in water re-used
	84. Increase in compactness
3.14	85. Climate resilience measures- The extent to
	which adaptation options have been
	considered in the project
3.15	86. Decreased emissions of Nitrogen dioxides
	(NO2) and Particulate matter (PM2,5)
	87. Reduced exposure to noise pollution
	88. Reduction in the amount of solid waste
	collected 89. Summer smog (Ozon)
	90. Fatal chronic lower respiratory diseases per
	inhabitant
I	

4.8 4.8 91. Importance as know research centres, top un 92. Population qualified at 93. Foreign language skills 94. % of population aged secondary-level educati in Urban Audit 95. % of inhabitants worki in research & developm 96. Individual level of com 97. Individual level of inter 98. Book loans per resident 99. Participation in life-lon 100.Participation in languag 4.10 101.Share of foreigners	hiversities etc.) levels 5-6 ISCED 1 15-64 with above ion and above living ing in education and hent sector puter skills
92. Population qualified at 93. Foreign language skills 94. % of population aged secondary-level educati in Urban Audit 95. % of inhabitants worki in research & developm	levels 5-6 ISCED 1 15-64 with above ion and above living ing in education and nent sector puter skills
93. Foreign language skills 94. % of population aged secondary-level educati in Urban Audit 95. % of inhabitants worki in research & developm	1 15-64 with above ion and above living ing in education and nent sector puter skills
94. % of population aged secondary-level education in Urban Audit 95. % of inhabitants working in research & developm	1 15-64 with above ion and above living ing in education and nent sector puter skills
secondary-level education in Urban Audit 95. % of inhabitants working in research & developm	ion and above living ing in education and nent sector puter skills
in Urban Audit 95. % of inhabitants worki in research & developm	ing in education and nent sector puter skills
95. % of inhabitants worki in research & developm	nent sector puter skills
in research & developm	nent sector puter skills
in research & developm	nent sector puter skills
	puter skills
4.9     97. Individual level of inter       98. Book loans per resident       90. Berticipation in 15 hors	
4.9 98. Book loans per resident	IIICI SNIIIS
00 Doutiningting in 196 Lag	t
99. Participation in life-lon	
100.Participation in languag	
4.10 101.Share of foreigners	Se courses
102.Share of nationals born	abroad
4.11 103.Perception of getting a	
104.Participation in volunta	
105.Increased use of cashles	
4.12 106.Share of people we	orking in creative
industries	
4.13 107.Voters turnout at election	
108.Immigration-friendly e	nvironment (attitude
towards immigration)	
109.Knowledge about the re-	egion/ country
5.13 110.Improved access to	basic health care
services- The extent to	o which the project
has increased accessib	pility to basic health
care	
111.Encouraging a healthy	lifestyle
112.Waiting time (reduction	
113.Life expectancy	• •
114.Hospital beds per inhab	oitant
115.Doctors per inhabitant	
116.Satisfaction with qualit	v of health system
5.14 117.Reduction of traffic acc	
118.Reduction in crime rate	
119.Improved cybersecurity	
120.Improved data privacy	y
	nol cofoty
121.Satisfaction with person	
5.15 122.Improved access to ed	lucational resources/
system	
123.Increased environmenta	
124.Improved digital literac	
125.Satisfaction with qua	lity of educational
system	
ت 126.No. of courses entirely	
the internet/total no. co	
127.Percentage of profess	ors and researchers
involved in internati	
exchange	- •
the internet/total no. co 127.Percentage of profess involved in internati exchange 128.Percentage of accessibl with disphilities (DWD)	le courses for people
S with disabilities (PWD)	

5.16	129.Touristic Importance as tourist location
5.10	(overnights, sights) - overnight stys in
	registered accommodation in per year per
	resident
5.17	130.Access to public transport
	131.Quality of public transport
	132.Improved access to vehicle sharing
	solutions
	133.Extending the bike route network
	134.Decreased travel time
	135.Provision for autonomous driving
	136.Access to public amenities
	137. Access to commercial amenities
	138.Increase in online government services/ e-
	Government on-line availability
	(percentage of the 20 basic services that are fully available online)
	139.e-Government usage by individuals
	(percentage individuals aged 16-74 who
	have used the Internet, in the last 3 months,
	for interaction with public authorities)
	140.Proportion of the area in for recreational
	sports and leisure use
5.18	141.People reached (Percentage of people in
	the target group that have been reached
	and/or are activated by 5 services in the
	project)
	142.Increased consciousness of citizenship and
	social coherence
	143.Increased participation of vulnerable
	groups
5.19	144.Diversity of housing types
	145.Design for a sense of place
	146.Increased access to urban public outdoor
	recreation space
	147.Increased access to green space
	148.Satisfaction with personal housing situation
5.20	149. Green Building Policies
5.20	150.Public and community housing
	151.Dwelling price to income ratio
	152.Free time
5.21	153.Adult obesity rate
	154.Support in times of crisis
	155.Suicide rate
	156.Office building energy efficiency
5.22	157.i-energy
	158.i-transport
	159.i-democracy
	160.i-government
	161.i-services
	162.i-home
5.23	163.Number of enterprises adopting ISO 14000
	standards
	164.Proportion of people undertaking industry-

		based training
	6.5	165.Satisfaction with international acceibility
	6.6	166.City area covered by cable networks (per
		cent of total area)
		167.City area covered by Wi-Fi networks (per cent of total area)
		168.City area covered by xDSL networks (per
		cent of total manufacturing enterprises)
		169.Computers (per million of population)
		170.Internet connections (per million of
		population)
		171.Broadband connections (per million of population)
		172.Users of e-gov services (per million of
		population)
		173.City enterprises owning a website (per cent of total enterprises)
		174.City enterprises involved in B2B or B2C
		(per cent of total enterprises)
Y		175.Number of telephones/handphone per
FI		household (Telephones or handphone /person)
OBI		176. Availability of social credit
M		177. Development of cloud platform and
RT		application Utilization
SMART MOBILITY		178. Open and Integrated Urban Operating
$\mathbf{S}$		System
		Geospatial
		Smart Grids
		Ontologies
		Semantic
		Linked APIs
		Cloud
		179. City Infrastructure for "real and connected"
		Life
		Sensors
		Activators
		WSAN
		B_WISE
		RFID
		Internet of Things
	6.7	180.Green mobility share (non-motorized
		individual traffic)
		181.Use of economical cars
	7.3	182.Peak travel delay 183.Social compatibility
u	1.3	185.Social compatibility
Propagation		185.Ease of use for end users of the solution
pag		186.Ease of use for professional stakeholders
$\Pr$		187.Trialability
		188. Advantages for end users
		189. Advantages for stakeholders

	190. Visibility of Results
	191.Solution(s) to development issues
	192.Market demand
7.4	193. Changing professional norms
	194. Changing societal norms
	195.Diffusion to other locations
	196.Diffusion to other actors
	197. Change in rules and regulations
	198. Change in public procurement
	199.New forms of financing
	200.Smart City project visitors

This table elaborates the inclusions under each subtheme. While 6 out of the 7 themes represent different aspects in a city, namely, economy, living (services by city domains), environment, people, transportation, ICT infrastructure and governance, the other theme, propagation is more about the smart city as a project. Theme propagation therefore looks at the project in a birdseye and depicts about the project inclusions. It consists of the critical success factors of a project as well as the scalability and replicability. In Figure 4.10 the 8 measures have been selected as the basis on which the rest of the themes should be developed, which can be defined as the critical success factors for SMCPC as a project. By drawing a frame around those themes and naming the frame as the propagation, the Performance Measurement System attempts to highlight the interrelationships between the rest the of themes by showing the propagation theme separately.

Through the data collection it was identified that people factor is also important as much as the ICT infrastructure for a Smart City. Therefore, Smart Mobility, which included ICT infrastructure and Smart People were shown as two main themes which indicates their overlapping relationships with the other themes, economy, governance, environment and living. Some of the obvious relationships between Smart Mobility (ICT infrastructure) are shown with overlapping shapes in the Figure. For instance, Innovation, Innovative spirit, and Innovation performance measure in Smart Economy theme, Added value city wide intelligent services in Smart Living theme and Transparent governance and public and social services measures under Smart Governance theme are such examples. In the same way the overlapping relationships between Smart People and Smart Living, Smart Governance, Smart Environment are shown. The measure green economy in Smart Economy theme is related to Smart Environment as well. Similarly, Education and Research, which describes about the public expenditure on research and education is important to the education measure under Smart Living theme. Access to other services measure under Smart Living depicts some of the performance measures with regards to public services which are related to Smart Governance, therefore, is shown as an overlapping relationship. These overlapping relationships shows important aspects in a city which most of the times are interrelated. Therefore, for those who are keen on Performance Measurement in a city can take an extra care on such aspects as they are significant not only to one aspect but for several. However, the developed Performance Measurement System should be applied always in connection to the List of Performance Measures to make it a complete Performance Measurement System.

While this is proven to be the suitable Performance Measurement System for SMCPC given that a suitable list of Performance Measures for SMCPC are in place, this can only be applied to similar city context with a suitable set of Performance Measures for those contexts.

All in all, the two situations this Performance Measurement System can be used in the Sri Lankan context are;

1) For SMCPC: with the Performance Measures (Themes, Subthemes, Indicators) listed under Table 4.3 – Scoring of indicators within sub-themes

2) For (other) emerging Smart Cities in Sri Lanka: with the Scoring Systems (Table 4.1 – Scoring of themes/ Table 4.2 – Scoring of sub-themes within the themes/ Table 4.3 – Scoring of indicators within sub-themes)

#### Stage 3: Findings of the questionnaire survey

## 4.5 Suitability of the listed Performance Measures of SMCPC to general Sri Lankan context

The set of Performance Measures listed out in the previous data collection phase was taken as a basis to develop a Performance Measurement System that is suitable to any type of an emerging Smart City in Sri Lanka, based on the relative importance and current data availability. In other words, while the developed Performance Measurement System (Figure 4.10) can be applied to any type of a Sri Lankan context, the list of Performance Measures should be assessed on the suitability for the context, in this study based on the importance and data availability. The results are analysed under the topics ranking of the themes, allocation of scores to subthemes within the main themes, allocation of scores to indicators within the subthemes so that the scores gained by three main sectors of the table themes, subthemes and indicators are covered.

As mentioned in under Questionnaire survey template design in Chapter 3, Battelle method has been used. Figure 4.11 is a snap shot of smart people theme and how the questionnaire results were calculated.

		Acade	mics	<sub>P</sub>	lanne	ers f	om	pu	blic	sec	tor		Plar	nner	rs fr	om	ргіч	ate	secto	,						Aca	den	nics			Pla	nner	s fr	om j	publ	lic s	ecto	ЭГ	F	lan	ners	fron	n pri	ivate	e sect	tor		Inc	dicators		A	cad	emics		F	lanne	ers fi	rom	publ	ic se	ctor		Pla	nners	s fra
e		Mai	ks				Mai	ks								Mar	ks					S.	b The	ma		M	1ark	S					ł	Marl	ks		ī					Ma	arks									Ma	rks		$\square$			Marl	ks						
The	Σ	N 10	15 16 17	116	118	120	121	122	124	125	126	131	132	34	135	136	137 138	139	140 141	142	Average		D The	me	Σ	2 2	4	15 Ie	2 12	116	117	118	120	121	122	124	125	127	131	32	134	135 136	137	138 139	140	141 142	Average			£	2	<u></u>	15	1	116	118	119 120	12	122	124 125	126	127	132	133 134	135
																																																	. Reduction in annual final energy insumption	20.00	9.00	16.00	14.00 15.00	13.00	10.00	13.00	10.00	15.00	11.00 16.00	14.00 11.00	10.00	12.00	13.00	12.00 10.00	12.00
																																																72.	. Reduction in lifecycle energy use	15.00	13.75	14.50 11 nn	13.00 14.00	12.00	10.00	13.00	14.UU 12.00	13.00	12.00 11.00	13.00 15.00	12.00	14.00 10.00	14.00	12.00 13.00	12.00
IN																																																pro	<ol> <li>Reduction of embodied energy of oducts and services used in the oject</li> </ol>	5.00	13.75	10.75	00.01	12.50	10.00	12.00	0.00	12.00	13.00	11.50	12.00	12.33	12.00	12.00	12.00
VIRONME	20.00	16.22 15.89	15.00 20.00	14.29	00.01	10.00	10.00	14.29	14.29	14.29	14.29	14.29	14.29	10.00	5.00	14.29	14.29 10.00	15.00	14.22 15.00	14.29			F																5										. Increase in local renewable energ; oduction	5.00	4.75	12.50	2.60	3.00	15.00	2.00	3.00	2.00	2.00	13.25 12.33	2.00	15.00	2.00	2.00	2.00
SMARTEN							Ì			·		ľ	·			·				Ì		3.4 mitiga	Energ ition	lγα	3.00					2.14									2.86									gei	i. Combined heat and power neration percentage of gross ectricity generation	10.00	13.75	9.75 16 nn	3.00	2.50	0.0	20	88	8	88	9.75 12.33	00	0.00	1.00	12.00	12.00
																																																76.	i. Alternative Energy Master plan	20.00	13.00	12.50 s	12.60	15.00	15.00	12.50	12.00	12.00	13.00	14.50 12.33	16.00	12.33	15.00	15.00 16.00	15.00
						8	Ç		9		6													P	a	g	e		2	1														ŀ	23	0	e	1	. Maximum Hourly Deficit	10.00	11.00	10.75	12.60 9.00	10.00	10.00	11.00	12.00	12.00	12.00	10.75 12.33	14.00	12.33	12.00	14.00 14.00	14.00
																										1.97 1.80	2.08	2.19	2.11		2.03	1.46 2.08	1.42	1.45	2.11 2.09	2.16	2.19	2.11 1.99		2.08 1.46	2.19	0.73 2.08	2.08	1.46 2.24	2.07	2.08	2.03	ext	<ol> <li>An assessment of the tensiveness of city energy efficiency andards for buildings</li> </ol>	15.00	11.00	13.25 4 5 nn	12.60 14.00	12.00	20.00	14.00	12.00 16.00	12.00	13.00 13.00	13.25 12.33	12.00	12.33	11.00	11.00 11.00	11.00
																																																79.	l. Increased efficiency of resources insumption	15.00	15.00	18.00 18.00	17.50 20.00	18.00	15.00	15.00	18.00	21.00	20.00 15.00	20.00 17.75	20.00	5.00	10.00	17.50 20.00	16.67
																																																inp		20.00	22.00	20.00 18.00	20.00	18.00	25.00	20.00	22.5U	24.00	16.67 22.50	20.00 17.75	20.00	20.00 20.00	20.00	17.50 20.00	16.67
																						3.5 water		terials, land,						14									43									81. wh the	Life time extension- The extent to hich measures were taken to prolong e service lifetime of products -	10.00	15.00	15.00 12.00	22.50 20.00	18.00	20.00	10.00	17.00 18.00	10.00	16.67 22.50	15.00 15.25	15.00	15.00	15.00	10.00 15.00	16.67
																						Ecosy		iana,	4					6									4.									82.	. Reduction in water consumption	15.00	18.00	12.00 18.00	15.00 13.33	18.00	15.00	15.00	10.00 14.00	15.00	13.33 15.00	15.00 17.75	15.00	15.00	20.00	15.00 10.00	16.67
																																																	). Increase in water re-used	20.00	20.00	20.00 18.00	15.00 13.33	18.00	15.00	20.00	15.00 14.00	18.00	20.00 15.00	15.00 17.75	15.00	30.00	20.00	20.00 20.00	16.67
																										1.82 1.95	1.48	1.55	1.56		1.44	1.03	1.29	1.10	1.47 1.48	1.49	1.56	1.41 1.41		1.48	1.55	0.52 1.48	1.47	2.10 1.60	1.47	1.48	1.48		. Increase in compactness	20.00	10.00	15.00 18.00	10.00	10.00	10.00	20.00	1 /	12.00	13.33	15.00 13.75	15.00	15.00	15.00	20.00 15.00	16.67
																																									1.1.1		1 1		1.1				. Climate resilience measures- <i>The</i>																

Figure 4.11: A snap shot of questionnaire survey results- mean score calculation

#### 4.5.1 Ranking of the themes

Questionnaire survey participants were invited to allocate a total score of 100 among the 6 main themes. The scoring process can be illustrated as follows in Figure 4.12;

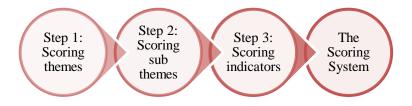


Figure 4.12: Development of the Scoring System to measure the performance of Sri Lankan Smart Cities

Mean scores allocated to the themes ranged from 13.42 to 15.83, all falling within 2.14 range. This suggests that the respondents have considered all the themes as equally important, albeit with minor variances (See Table 4.1).

Based on the mean scores allocated, a scoring system can be developed to measure how 'smart' a Smart City is; similar to scoring systems like Building Research Establishment Environmental Assessment Method (BREEAM) and Leadership in Energy and Environmental Design (LEED). Considering the total number of indicators, it is proposed to use a scoring system out of 1000 to make the scoring system more readable and allocation of scores to indicators more meaningful. Accordingly, the scores out of 100 were converted to out of 1000. Score allocated out of 1000 is shown in the final column in Table 4.1.

14010 1.2	beering of memes	

Table 4.2 - Scoring of themes

Theme	Mean score	Standard Deviation	Score out of 1000 (rounded up to the nearest whole number)
Smart Mobility	15.83	3.64	158
Smart Economy	14.78	4.36	148
Smart Living	14.59	2.93	146

Theme	Mean score	Standard Deviation	Score out of 1000 (rounded up to the nearest whole number)
Smart People	14.02	3.49	140
Smart Environment	13.88	2.87	139
Propagation	13.49	3.50	135
Smart Governance	13.42	1.93	134
Total score	100		1000

Note: This list comprised of Performance Measures (themes) suitable for SMCPC, can be applied to emerging Smart Cities in Sri Lanka based on the scores (which are given considering the data availability and their significance to the Sri Lankan context.

Smart Mobility with a mean score of 15.83 was ranked first by the participants, followed by Smart Economy (14.78) and Smart Living (14.59). Themes are ranked according to the scores allocated in Table 4.1. Smart Governance was allocated a slightly lower score than Propagation, suggesting that the respondents have viewed Propagation as an important aspect of a Smart City. Further, whilst the theme that includes ICT infrastructure (Smart Mobility) was ranked 1<sup>st</sup>, the theme including environmental considerations (Smart Environment) was ranked 5<sup>th</sup> suggesting that the respondents have placed a greater impetus on technological aspects in Smart Cities over Environmental considerations.

## 4.5.2 Allocation of scores to sub-themes within the main themes

As the 2<sup>nd</sup> step in the scoring process (See Figure 4.12), the participants were asked to distribute the score that they have allocated to themes among the sub-themes that comes under the particular theme. The results of this exercise are shown in Table 4.2, in which sub-themes within each theme is ranked by the mean score. Mean scores were then converted to a scoring system out of 1000, and the scores allocated to sub-themes were rounded up/down to the nearest whole number. Minor adjustments were made where required to tally the scores allocated to sub-themes with that allocated to the particular theme. Such instances are denoted with an '\*' within the table.

Theme	Sub-theme	Mean Score	Score out of 1000
Smart	Availability of IT Infrastructure	6.79	68
Mobility	Inter(national) accessibility	5.00	50
(158)	Sustainable, innovative, and safe transport system	4.03	40
Smart Economy	Innovation, Innovative spirit, and Innovation performance	2.69	27
(148)	Employment, Jobs and Skills	2.03	20
	Production and Productivity	1.98	20
	International embeddedness	1.78	18
	Green economy	1.77	18
	Education and Research and Development	1.72	17
	Entrepreneurship	1.51	15
	Economic performance	1.30	13
Smart	Education facilities	1.62	16
Living	Safety	1.61	16
(146)	Health conditions	1.58	16
	Access to (other) services	1.53	15
	Added value city-wide intelligent services	1.37	14
	Liveability and Sustainability	1.34	13
	Quality of life of the community	1.30	13
	Quality of housing and the built environment	1.20	12
	Touristic attractivity	1.12	11
	Diversity and social cohesion	1.05	11*
	Quality of industry-based services	0.87	9
Smart	Level of qualification, Education and skills	3.04	30
People (140)	of the population		
	Cosmopolitanism and open-mindedness	2.45	24
	Creativity	2.36	24
	Social and ethnic plurality	2.26	23
	Flexibility	2.18	22
	Affinity to lifelong learning	1.72	17
Smart	Sustainable resource management	2.29	23
Environment	Environmental protection	2.07	21

# Table 4.3 – Scoring of sub-themes within the themes

Theme	Sub-theme	Mean Score	Score out of
			1000
(139)	Climate resilience	2.06	21
	Energy & mitigation	2.03	20
	Pollution & waste	2.02	20
	Eco-sustainability	1.93	19
	Materials, water, land, Ecosystem	1.48	15
Propagation	Factors of success	6.75	68
(135)	Replicability & scalability	6.74	67
Smart	Planning and Regulation	2.72	27
Governance	Organization composition, process,	2.47	25
(134)	leadership, and transparency		
	Transparent governance	2.41	24
	Community involvement in decision-making	2.20	22
	Public and social services	2.05	20
	Governance fragmentation	1.57	16

Note: This list comprised of Performance Measures (subthemes) suitable for SMCPC, can be applied to emerging Smart Cities in Sri Lanka based on the scores (which are given considering the data availability and their significance to the Sri Lankan context.

According to the scores allocated, availability of the ICT infrastructure emerged as the sub-theme with the highest priority. The two sub-themes within Propagation theme were the next two high-scoring sub-themes but this is explained by the fact that propagation only has 2 sub-themes, whereas all other themes had more subthemes.

## 4.5.3 Allocation of scores to indicators within the sub-themes

In the third step, the participants were required to allocate scores to Smart City indicators within each sub-theme. The participants were asked to allocate scores out of 100 within each sub-theme and the scores allocated to the sub-themes in the previous stage were then distributed among the sub-themes accordingly. Within each sub-theme, indicators are ranked according to the score allocated to them. Given that some of the sub-themes consist of many indicators, scores were rounded up/down to

the nearest decimal point and minor adjustments were made to ensure that the score allocated to the sub-theme is fully distributed amongst the indicators within it / does not exceed the sub-theme score.

The me	Sub-theme	Indicator	% score in sub- theme	Score
	Availability of IT	City Infrastructure for "real and connected"	9.32%	6.30
	Infrastructure (68)	Life-Sensors, Activators, WSAN, B_WISE,		
		RFID, Internet of Things		
		Open and Integrated Urban Operating System -	9.31%	6.30
		Geospatial, Smart Grids, Ontologies, Semantic,		
		Linked APIs, Cloud		
		City area covered by Wi-Fi networks (per cent	8.93%	6.10
		of total area)		
		Users of e-gov services (per million of	8.82%	6.00
		population)		
		Broadband connections (per million of	7.68%	5.20
		population)		
		Development of cloud platform and application	7.11%	4.80
		Utilization		
		Number of telephones/handphone per household	7.10%	4.80
		(Telephones or handphone /person)		
		Availability of social credit	6.92%	4.70
		City area covered by cable networks (per cent of	6.84%	4.70
		total area)		
		City enterprises owning a website (per cent of	6.29%	4.30
		total enterprises)		
		Computers (per million of population)	5.79%	3.90
		City area covered by xDSL networks (per cent	5.44%	3.70
		of total manufacturing enterprises)		
		Internet connections (per million of population)	5.39%	3.70
lity		City enterprises involved in B2B or B2C (per	5.06%	3.50
Iobi		cent of total enterprises)		
art N 8)	Inter(national)	Satisfaction with international accessibility	100%	50
Smart Mobility (158)	accessibility (50)			

Table 4.4 – Scoring of indicators within sub-themes

The me	Sub-theme	Indicator	% score in sub-	Score
T			theme	
	Sustainable,	Green mobility share (non-motorized individual	36.49%	14.60
	innovative, and safe	traffic)		
	transport system	Use of economical cars	33.21%	13.30
	(40)	Peak travel delay	30.31%	12.10
	Innovation,	New start-ups- number of start-ups resulting	12.07%	3.30
	Innovative spirit,	from the project		
	and Innovation	Stimulating an innovative environment-The	10.66%	2.90
	performance (27)	extent to which the project is part of or		
		stimulates an innovative environment		
		Quality of open data-The extent to which the	9.92%	2.70
		quality of the open data produced by the project		
		was increased - number of stars		
		Involvement of extraordinary professionals- The	9.18%	2.50
		extent to which the project involved		
		professionals normally not encountered in these		
		type of projects		
		Employment rate in: High Tech and creative	6.93%	1.90
		industries; Renewable energy and energy		
		efficiency systems Financial intermediation and		
		business activities; knowledge-intensive sectors;		
		Culture and entertainment industry; Commercial		
		services; Transport and communication; Hotels		
		and restaurants; All companies (total number)		
		Number of local units manufacturing high tech	6.10%	1.70
		& ICT products		
		Improved interoperability- The extent to which	5.73%	1.60
		the project has increased interoperability		
		between community infrastructures		
		Exports high-tech services (as a percentage of	5.43%	1.50
		total exports)		
(148		New business models for smart growth and	5.37%	1.50
my (		quality of life - Living Labs, Creative class,		
cono		Web of Trust		
urt Ea		Enterprises having internal Research &	5.05%	1.40
Sma		Development Department (as a percentage of all		
Smart Economy (148)			5.05%	

The	me	Sub-theme	Indicator	% score in sub- theme	Score
			enterprises)		
			Number of Science and Technology Parks	4.70%	1.30
			Number of Technology Transfer and Innovation Centres	4.49%	1.20
			Sales of new-to-market products (as a percentage of turnover)	3.66%	1.00
			Number of incubators	3.55%	0.90
			New trademarks	3.18%	0.90
			Patent applications per inhabitant	2.32%	0.60
			Sales of new-to-firm not new-to-market products (as a percentage of turnover)	1.39%	0.40
		Employment, Jobs	Increased use of local workforce	39.84%	8.00
		and Skills (20)	Employment rate	37.76%	7.50
			Proportion in part-time employment	22.20%	4.50
		Production and	GDP (of smart services) per head of city	61.13%	12.20
		Productivity (20)	population		
			Establishment of important decision-making centres (HQ etc.)	38.87%	7.80
		International embeddedness (18)	Air transport of passengers and freight	100%	18.00
		Green economy (18)	Green public procurement- Percentage annual procurement using environmental criteria as share of total annual procurement of the city administration	29.93%	5.40
			CO2 reduction cost efficiency- Costs per ton of CO2 saved per year	25.96%	4.70
			Energy intensity of the economygross inland consumption of energy divided by GDP	25.80%	4.60
			Certified companies involved in the project	18.31%	3.30
		Education and	Public expenditure on education - percentage of	37.10%	6.30
		Research and	GDP per head of city population		
		Development (17)	Public expenditure on R&D -percentage of GDP per head of city population	33.98%	5.80
			Number of research grants funded by international projects	29.09%	4.90

The me	Sub-theme	Indicator	% score in sub- theme	Score
	Entrepreneurship	Self-employment rate	37.71%	5.70
	(15)	New businesses registered	32.00%	4.80
		Percentage of projects funded by civil society	30.29%	4.50
	Economic	Financial benefit for the stakeholder - Total cost	100%	13.00
	performance (13)	savings in euros for a stakeholder per year		
Smart	Education facilities	Improved digital literacy	17.46%	2.80
Livin g (146)	(16)	Improved access to educational resources/ system	16.20%	2.60
		Satisfaction with quality of educational system	16.04%	2.60
		Increased environmental awareness	15.80%	2.50
		Percentage of accessible courses for people with disabilities (PWD)	13.05%	2.10
		Percentage of professors and researchers involved in international projects and exchange	11.71%	1.90
		No. of courses entirely downloadable from the internet/total no. courses	9.75%	1.50
	Safety (16)	Reduction in crime rate	20.78%	3.30
		Improved data privacy	20.49%	3.30
		Satisfaction with personal safety	20.41%	3.30
		Improved cybersecurity	20.39%	3.20
		Reduction of traffic accidents	17.93%	2.90
	Health conditions	Encouraging a healthy lifestyle	16.96%	2.70
	(16)	Improved access to basic health care services-	16.90%	2.70
		The extent to which the project has increased accessibility to basic health care		
		Life expectancy	15.51%	2.50
		Doctors per inhabitant	14.15%	2.30
		Satisfaction with quality of health system	13.05%	2.10
		Hospital beds per inhabitant	12.15%	1.90
		Waiting time (reduction of queues)	11.27%	1.80
	Access to (other)	Decreased travel time	13.85%	2.10
	services (15)	Increase in online government services/ e- Government on-line availability (percentage of the 20 basic services that are fully available	12.31%	1.80
		online)		

me	Sub-theme	Indicator	% score in sub- theme	Score
		e-Government usage by individuals (percentage	10.79%	1.60
		individuals aged 16-74 who have used the		
		Internet, in the last 3 months, for interaction		
		with public authorities)		
		Improved access to vehicle sharing solutions	9.57%	1.40
		Access to public amenities	9.50%	1.40
		Quality of public transport	8.80%	1.30
		Access to public transport	8.17%	1.20
		Provision for autonomous driving	7.72%	1.20
		Extending the bike route network	6.98%	1.40
		Access to commercial amenities	6.50%	1.00
		Proportion of the area in for recreational sports	5.83%	0.90
		and leisure use		
	Added value city-	i-energy	20.11%	2.80
	wide intelligent	i-transport	19.75%	2.80
	services (14)	i-services	15.71%	2.20
		i-democracy	15.44%	2.10
		i-government	14.90%	2.10
		i-home	14.10%	2.00
	Liveability and	Support in times of crisis	31.17%	4.10
	Sustainability (13)	Office building energy efficiency	29.71%	3.90
		Suicide rate	22.08%	2.80
		Adult obesity rate	17.04%	2.20
	Quality of life of	Dwelling price to income ratio	36.78%	4.80
	the community (13)	Public and community housing	36.03%	4.70
		Free time	27.22%	3.50
	Quality of housing	Increased access to green space	21.24%	2.50
	and the built	Increased access to urban public outdoor	20.26%	2.40
	environment (12)	recreation space		
		Green Building Policies	16.16%	1.90
		Design for a sense of place	15.54%	1.90
		Satisfaction with personal housing situation	15.54%	1.90
		Diversity of housing types	11.25%	1.40
	Touristic	Touristic Importance as tourist location	100%	11.00
	attractivity (11)	(overnights, sights) - overnight stays in		

The me	Sub-theme	Indicator	% score in sub- theme	Score
		registered accommodation in per year per		
		resident		
	Diversity and social	Increased consciousness of citizenship and	34.43%	3.80
	cohesion (11)	social coherence		
		People reached (Percentage of people in the	34.31%	3.80
		target group that have been reached and/or are		
		activated by 5 services in the project)		
		Increased participation of vulnerable groups	31.27%	3.40
	Quality of industry-	Number of enterprises adopting ISO 14000	53.92%	4.90
	based services (9)	standards		
		Proportion of people undertaking industry-based	46.08%	4.10
		training		
	Level of	Importance as knowledge centres (top research	16.53%	5.00
	qualification,	centres, top universities etc.)		
	Education and skills	% of inhabitants working in education and in	15.43%	4.60
	of the population	research & development sector		
	(30)	% of population aged 15-64 with above	14.99%	4.50
		secondary-level education and above living in		
		Urban Audit		
		Individual level of internet skills	14.80%	4.40
		Individual level of computer skills	14.20%	4.30
		Population qualified at levels 5-6 ISCED	12.74%	3.80
		Foreign language skills	11.32%	3.40
	Cosmopolitanism	Knowledge about the region/ country	34.92%	8.40
	and open-	Immigration-friendly environment (attitude	32.77%	7.80
	mindedness (24)	towards immigration)		
		Voters turnout at elections	32.31%	7.80
	Creativity (24)	Share of people working in creative industries	100.00%	24.00
	Social and ethnic	Share of nationals born abroad	56.67%	13.00
(0)	plurality (23)	Share of foreigners	43.33%	10.00
	Flexibility (22)	Participation in voluntary work	36.23%	8.00
e (1 <sup>∠</sup>		Increased use of cashless transactions	35.84%	7.90
Smart People (140)		Perception of getting a new job	27.93%	6.10
art P	Affinity to lifelong	Participation in life-long-learning in %	42.83%	7.30
Smi	learning (17)	Book loans per resident	28.85%	4.90

I ne me	Sub-theme	Indicator	% score in sub- theme	Score
		Participation in language courses	28.32%	4.80
	Sustainable	The total percentage of the working population	23.19%	5.30
	resource	traveling to work on public transport, by bicycle		
	management (23)	and by foot		
		Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)	21.07%	4.90
		Proportion of recycled waste per total kilogram	20.35%	4.70
		of waste produced		
		Percentage of citizens engaged in environmental	17.91%	4.10
		and sustainability-oriented activity		
		An assessment of the extensiveness of efforts to	17.48%	4.00
		increase the use of cleaner transport		
	Environmental	Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emissions	28.51%	6.00
	protection (21)	An assessment of the comprehensiveness of	26.74%	5.60
		policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve		
		and monitor environmental performance		
		Individual efforts and opinion on protecting	24.16%	5.10
		nature		
		An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2	20.59%	4.30
		emission reduction strategy		
	Climate resilience	Climate resilience measures- The extent to	100.00%	21.00
	(21)	which adaptation options have been considered		
		in the project		
	Energy &	Alternative Energy Master plan	13.64%	2.70
	mitigation (20)	Reduction in annual final energy consumption	13.23%	2.60
		An assessment of the extensiveness of city	12.91%	2.60
		energy efficiency standards for buildings		
		Reduction in lifecycle energy use	12.69%	2.50
		Increase in local renewable energy production	12.35%	2.50
		Combined heat and power generation	11.86%	2.40
(YCI		percentage of gross electricity generation		
ent (		Reduction of embodied energy of products and	11.76%	2.40
		services used in the project		
Smårt Environment (129		Maximum Hourly Deficit	11.57%	2.30
	Pollution & waste	Decreased emissions of Nitrogen dioxides	21.99%	4.40
2 IIIC	(20)	(NO2) and Particulate matter (PM2,5)		

The me	Sub-theme	Indicator	% score in sub- theme	Score
		Reduction in the amount of solid waste collected	20.32%	4.10
		Fatal chronic lower respiratory diseases per inhabitant	19.45%	3.90
		Summer smog (Ozon)	19.21%	3.80
		Reduced exposure to noise pollution	19.03%	3.80
	Eco-sustainability	% Increase in green and blue space due to the	35.73%	6.80
	(19)	project	22.720/	6.20
		Increased ecosystem quality and biodiversity-	32.73%	6.20
		Extent to which ecosystem quality and		
		biodiversity aspects have been taken into		
		account		1.0.0
		Percentage of new buildings which were assessed in terms of sustainability	31.86%	6.00
	Materials, water,	Share of recycled and renewable input materials	19.94%	3.00
	land, Ecosystem	Increase in water re-used	18.01%	2.70
	(15)	Increased efficiency of resources consumption	17.53%	2.60
		Life time extension-The extent to which measures were taken to prolong the service lifetime of products	15.38%	2.30
		Reduction in water consumption	15.15%	2.30
		Increase in compactness	13.98%	2.10
	Factors of success	Change in public procurement	16.01%	10.90
	(68)	Change in rules and regulations	15.67%	10.70
		New forms of financing	13.84%	9.40
		Changing societal norms	12.95%	8.80
		Diffusion to other locations	11.43%	7.80
		Diffusion to other actors	10.51%	7.10
		Smart City project visitors	10.27%	7.00
		Changing professional norms	9.31%	6.30
	Replicability &	Ease of use for end-users of the solution	12.21%	8.20
Propagation (135)	scalability (67)	Advantages for stakeholders	11.10%	7.40
		Advantages for end-users	11.05%	7.40
agat		Market demand	11.04%	7.40
Prop		Social compatibility	10.63%	7.10

The me	Sub-theme	Indicator	% score in sub- theme	Score
		Solution(s) to development issues	10.39%	7.00
		Technical compatibility	9.83%	6.60
		Ease of use for professional stakeholders	8.82%	5.90
		Trialability	7.69%	5.10
		Visibility of Results	7.25%	4.90
	Planning and	Smart Urban Planning	44.35%	12.00
	Regulation (27)	Smart City policy - the extent to which the	34.13%	9.20
		project has benefitted from a governmental		
		Smart City policy		
		Smart Identity Branding	21.52%	5.80
	Organization	Continued monitoring and reporting - The	19.27%	4.80
	composition,	extent to which the progress towards project		
	process, leadership,	goals and compliance with requirements is		
	and transparency	being monitored and reported		
	(25)	Balanced project team - The extent to which the	17.53%	4.40
		project team included all relevant experts and		
		stakeholders from the start		
		Leadership- The extent to which the leadership	17.16%	4.30
		of the project is successful in creating support		
		for the project		
		Market orientation- The extent to which the	16.42%	4.10
		project was planned on the basis of a market		
		analysis		
		Clear division of responsibility- Has the	15.43%	3.90
		responsibility for achieving the social and		
		sustainability targets been clearly assigned to (a)		
		specific actor(s) in the project		
		Involvement of the city administration- The	14.19%	3.50
		extent to which the local authority is involved in		
134)		the development of the project, other than		
) eol		financial, and how many departments are		
rnan		contributing		
Jove	Transparent	Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy	53.77%	12.90
Smart Governance (134)	governance (24)	Satisfaction with fight against corruption	46.23%	11.10
Sm	Community	Local community involvement in	21.16%	4.70

The	me	Sub-theme	Indicator	% score in sub- theme	Score
		involvement in	implementation phase- Extent to which		
		decision-making	residents/users have been involved in the		
		(22)	implementation process		
			Participatory governance % Share of population	16.37%	3.60
			participating in online platforms		
			Professional stakeholder involvement- The	15.96%	3.50
			extent to which professional stakeholders		
			outside the project team have been involved in		
			planning and execution		
			Participation by social media	13.69%	3.00
			Share of female city representatives	12.60%	2.80
			Importance of politics for inhabitants	11.17%	2.40
			City representatives per resident	9.04%	2.00
		Public and social	Reduction in waiting time to obtain services	38.15%	7.60
		services (20)	Trading platform for public resources	32.40%	6.50
			Expenditure of the municipal per resident for	29.45%	5.90
			public and social services		
		Governance	Infrastructure Alignment	35.97%	5.80
		fragmentation (16)	District Regeneration	32.80%	5.20
			Governance orchestration	31.23%	5.00

Note: This list comprised of Performance Measures (indicators) suitable for SMCPC, can be applied to emerging Smart Cities in Sri Lanka based on the scores (which are given considering the data availability and their significance to the Sri Lankan

In construing the results, the researcher recommends to evaluate the score horizontally, under the respective subthemes. The reason for this can be explained with the climate resilience measures- the extent to which adaptation options have been considered in the project, under smart environment which yielded 21 score as the it was the only indicator under its subtheme. So, if the scores of indicators are compared against the indicators in different subthemes/ themes, an incorrect impression is expressed. Therefore, the indicators should be compared only under the same subtheme, just like it was marked by the survey respondents.

With the mean scores for each theme, subtheme and indicator the scoring system was developed for the Performance Measures. It can be argued that higher the scores the Performance Measures obtain with regards to indicators belonging to subthemes under each theme, higher significance of Performance Measures and a higher chance of the availability of data is indicated. The comparisons can be done between themes but not between subthemes/ indicators under different themes. The scores of indicators and subthemes should always be compared within each subtheme, each theme, respectively. The scored list of the Performance Measures should be referred whenever the Performance Measurement System is applied to Sri Lankan Smart Cities. It is recommended to review the scoring system against the availability of data prior application, as with the need the data may become available for certain applications in the future. However, for the time being the scores are allocated considering the current data availability and therefore the system can cater immediate application need.

# 4.6 Barriers to implement a Performance Measurement System to SMCPC: Findings from preliminary interviews (Stage 1)

Implementation of the Performance Measurement System to SMCPC comes with several challenges. They were reviewed to a certain extent linking literature evidences by relating common barriers of Performance Measurement implementation to the Smart City context. Subsequently, the identified barriers were given to the experts in preliminary interview round to add more of the barriers they would think of. Following an analysis on a combined set of barriers list, the experts were requested to provide suggestions to those barriers in the case study interview round. The barriers identified in the preliminary round can be illustrated through a cognitive map as follows in Figure 4.13;

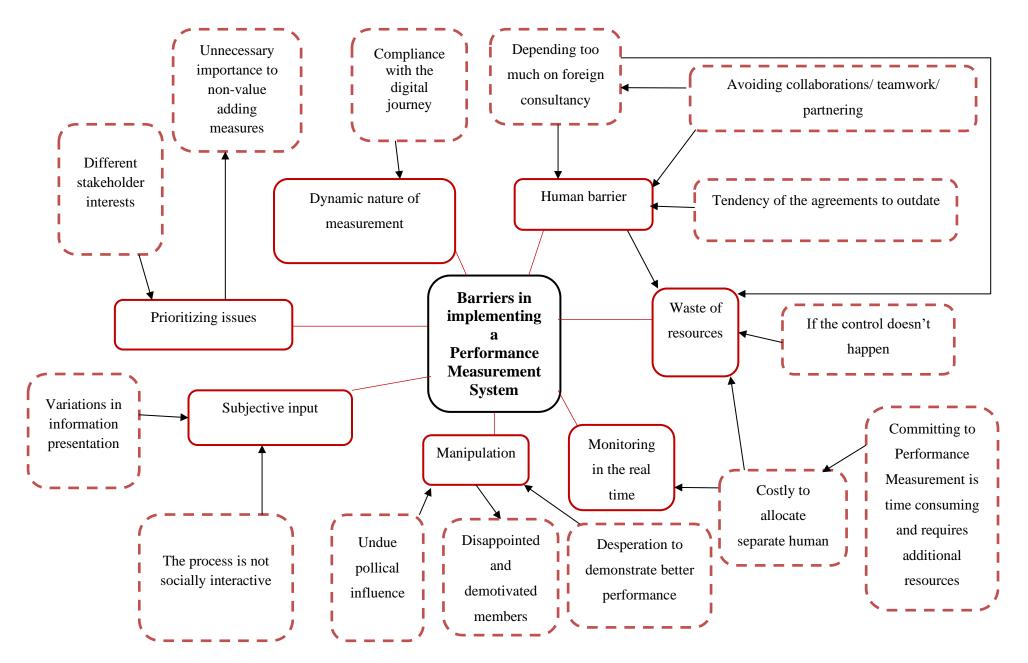


Figure 4.13: Cognitive map on barriers to implement a Performance Measurement System to Sri Lankan Smart Cities

One of the most important steps in Performance Measurement procedure is the monitoring of performance measures. The established measures will be compared with the monitored results so that actions can be taken. I8 raised concerns over this monitoring task "who is going to monitor the results in real time should be clarified". According to I10 who had similar concerns said "it shouldn't be an additional cost to the EMC".

The term monitoring often goes hand in hand with controlling. "I have experienced certain situations where all costly resources were assigned for the measuring performance and the feedforward didn't happen" said I8 who mentioned about the likelihood of a resource wastage when the true benefits of Performance Measurement were not considered. Therefore, the risk of resource waste would be there as a result of not having strategic objectives tied to the performance management process.

As Smart Cities involved a digital ecosystem, it needs to be a collaborative work. However, as per the experts, collaborations are not long lasting in Sri Lanka due to various reasons in the usual conduct of work. Adding to the issue I3 mentioned "Mostly the distinct parties have trust issues and they are not flexible as much as they should be". This leads to settling with agreements which are rigid and bureaucratic. I2 added "agreements can outdate quickly which becomes a major problem as this involves technology which develops rapidly". I9 describing this human barrier brought in the google maps example. According to her "even when dynamic personalities are there having knowledge about the roads in our own country, it was the Google who mapped out the road network. Google did as a teamwork giving small tasks to small teams which would have been harder for a Sri Lankan company.".

Similarly, the local consultants seemed to be a bit disappointed about the current trend of recruiting foreign consultancy other than locals working together getting use of their knowledge and expertise. "the same existing resources are what the them experts combine, only thing we don't trust on the combining part done by our resources. I believe our collective effort can do a lot than what an outsider does"

added I5 highlighting the harm the human barrier could do ultimately leading to costly acquiring of resources that doesn't add value than the existing resources.

In the actual application of the Performance Measurement System in SMCPC context, results manipulations may take place. As the SMCPC is a center of public interest as well as global attention, Performance Measurement would be an ideal source that provides evidences about the developments and gaps between expected and actual performance. In order to prove that the city is well performing, the responsible parties of even ill performing aspects might try to manipulate data and pretend. This can affect negatively to the improvements as actions cannot be taken to the actually ill performing sectors when they are hidden. Further one of the mostly mentioned comment was the possible influence from politicians. I10 representing most of the experts' opinion said "there's no guarantee that corrupted politicians do not unduly influence the Performance Measurement too, just like it happens everywhere in the public sector". Adding to that matter I13 said "There is a higher chance for the members of such sectors to feel disappointed and lose trust." Apart from the manipulated results, another way that correct results do not get exposed is because of the human errors in reporting and data feeding.

It is no doubt that each indicator in the Performance Measurement System can be interpreted differently. However, the indicators are developed in a way that it allows efficient and effective conversion of data into meaningful information which is supposed to be transformed into knowledge and ultimately provide the basis for real wisdom. For that everyone should be directed on the correct path so that biasness from policy makers' end does not happen. "I find the lack of social interaction in forming indicators is the main reason that gives the chance for the subjectivity component to affect the final results. When a transparent process makes all the policy makers aware about the true needs of the indicators, purposely or mistakenly the reviewers cannot interpret things in their own way" added I2. The variations in the final conclusions and reports therefore is a major barrier.

In Smart City related Performance Measurement System which takes a holistic view, prioritizing can be considered mandatory by looking at the trend. "Most of the

successful Smart Cities prioritize their underlying requirements and purpose to have a Smart City" specified I14, in describing the issues which may encounter in prioritizing the interests of different stakeholders and dimensions of a Smart City. If the prioritization is ignored non value adding indicators may also get the similar importance, the value adding indicators receive. Although this study provides a generic Performance Measurement System at some point in the actual application the themes will need to be prioritized so that the most suited indicators will be given an emphasis and thereby the resources can be utilized. Yet this prioritization can be a tedious task as several groups of stakeholders having conflicting interests/ comforts/ benefits get affected differently positively or negatively with the prioritization. Therewith the decisions are critical and challenging.

As Smart City development involves a digital journey and rapidly developing technology there's a higher chance that the indicators getting outdated and thereby the Performance Measurement System. Therefore, the dynamic nature of performance measures needs to be taken in to the account and they should always be in long term plans. This becomes quite challenging in certain contexts specially in the SMCPC where the measures largely depend on the long-term vision of the smart experts who are engaged in the city.

#### 4.7 Solutions to the identified barriers: Findings from Case Study (Stage 2)

Through the obtained opinions as solutions to the identified challenges, it can be seen that the solutions are generic and interrelated. In other words, the solutions stipulate on improving the Performance Measurement in SMCPC without making it a burden. Therefore, the solutions are analysed as a whole and presented under the following topics.

#### 4.7.1 Making Performance Measurement relevant

The performance measures should be first aligned with the Smart City's strategy. Therefore, the Performance Measurement System developed for SMCPC has been checked against the SMCPC's objectives and the same needs to be done for the generic Performance Measurement System as well. Further the process should be made relevant to all the involved individuals as well. I7 added "there should be responsible parties who manage the individuals in digital ecosystem who are involved in various aspects of the Smart City, these individuals should be clear on how their work is related to measurement and how their actions affect the results". In order to do this a systematic and integrated approach should be taken aiming great advantages by creating a synergy. I1 suggested a practical way of doing it through "initiating meaningful discussion to educate all the policy makers and team players in the digital ecosystem in the city regarding performance measures".

## 4.7.2 Prioritizing

In the Smart City context Performance Measurement is mostly about learning and improvement. While the performance measuring in SMCPC is possible to be a responsibility of one organization (possibly EMC), the organization can facilitate the Smart City to be smarter but facilitating would not be measured as a performance in the Smart City. The smartness would be the basis for the Performance Measurement in the Smart City, which cannot be done overnight by the individual of the organization. Making a city smarter would be a responsibility of the policy makers in the initiation and thereafter by the organization that administer and manages the city while facilitating other smart features to branch out with the interests of different external organizations. Therefore, the stakeholders majorly involved would be the policy makers, individuals in the digital and urban ecosystem that manages/ administer the city. Managing conflicting interests put forward by the them stakeholders need effective stakeholder management. "Prioritizing the stakeholders' interests should be done in the initial stage and should be appropriately communicated too" added I6.

#### 4.7.3 Using right performance measures

Emphasizing another important aspect which requires prioritizing I1 added "most importantly, if the comprehensive Performance Measurement System is to be used, the themes should be prioritized so that the optimal resource allocation can happen". By means of having the right mix, accurate targets can be set and the resource wastages can be avoided. The solution to the barrier of monitoring in the real time as

supposed by the experts was also to predetermine the right set of leading and lagging indicators to measure and monitor performance so that repetitions do not occur. "The lengthy nature of the process can also be reduced by avoiding repetitions" said I1. One way to identify the right indicators as per I5 is by looking at the required resource and energy consumption. Adding to 15's comments I4 said "the right performance measures will be efficient in themselves will not consume energy and resources unnecessarily in measuring performance".

#### 4.7.4 Taking an integrated approach

An integrated approach provides means for policy makers with different perspectives to come to a single platform and present multiple views, eventually resulting in obtaining the bigger picture. "The integrated approach in decision making regarding the appropriateness of different indicators in the Performance Measurement Systems developed from this study to a particular Smart City context would be the one ideal way with which it allows you to develop targets rigorously or independently" said I3 emphasizing the importance of working together. According to most of the experts, this further ensures setting city wide objectives and maintaining the consistency

## **4.7.5 Improving transparency**

According to I3 who represented the opinion of I11, I12 and I7, "the degree of openness of measurement is one measure that demonstrate the maturity of a Performance Measurement System". Having measurement data available to those who needs it, increases the accountability and credibility of the effort. That way the human errors and human barriers can be kept limited and the increased transparency gives motivation to the involved parties of the Performance Measurement procedure.

# 4.7.6 Adhering to appropriate codes of ethics

This was suggested to overcome the risk of results manipulation. Other than the solution to use targets and measures that are equally valuable and important to all stakeholders another suggestion given was to introduce random monitoring processes. However, it was seen that manipulation becomes a result of reward system and so that experts' bear an opinion that the responsible partied before everything

should make sure such systems doesn't lead to manipulation. However, almost all the experts suggested an attitudinal change as a solution to achieve the true benefits which can lead to overcome the human barriers and dislike towards collaborations.

#### 4.7.7 Adopting agile practices

Experts borne an opinion that this would be a solution to the dynamic nature and easily outdating performance measures. According to I2, agile practices include features like rapid obtaining of feedback, setting value-based priorities, working as small teams, engaging users to refine requirement. The most important feature is that this allows engaging the policy makers and the rest of the team including the city dwellers to come together and closely work through every few weeks for progress reviews and mainly to address the issues encountered. "The frequent interactions allow implementing modifications quicker so that faster revisions and relaunches take place" added I8.

## 4.8 Discussion on the case study and preliminary interview findings

The research outcomes so far can simply be put in a nutshell in terms of the suitability of the Performance Measurement System to the SMCPC and the enablers, barriers and solutions for the barriers in implementing Performance Measurement Systems to Smart Cities. The following analysis involves discussing the obtained findings with the use of literature mentioned in Chapter 2 as well as the literature from outside that could support the findings.

# **4.8.1 Importance of implementing a Performance Measurement System to Sri Lankan Smart Cities**

Performance Measurement is not so new to Sri Lanka or more specifically to the public sector in Sri Lanka. The nature of responses from the experts who were involved throughout the data collection procedure proves the fact. The evidences were found Sri Lanka regarding a comprehensive Performance Measurement System which has been piloted in 2006/7 with 4 key line Ministries (Education, Health, Agriculture, Highways) (Putu, Jan van Helden, & Tillema, 2007; Sivagnanasothy, 2010). Furthermore there were evidences that several industries practicing

Performance Measurement in their operations. Some of which includes, apparel industry (Malmadana Kapuge & Smith, 2007; Perera & Perera, 2013), banking sector (Nimalathasan, 2009), manufacturing industry (Dilanthi, 2013), smart parking sensor network (Bandara, et al., 2016), smart disaster risk management approach (Ibrahim, 2010). However, there has been no clue with regards to the use of Performance Measurement in Smart Cities sector in Sri Lanka. Although the Smart Cities concept being an emerging one, logical reasoning to proceed with a research on Performance Measurement was not hard to find.

According to Neely (2005), the key contributors in Performance Measurement are now entering a phase where theoretical verification and empirical investigation of core concepts are largely appreaciated. Even in the Smart Cities scenario it can be seen that research projects being carried out alongside or prior to the implementation of performance measurement. One famous example is the Giffinger, et al.'s (2007) study. Knowledge that could transfer from the research, as a reliable scientific basis, to the actual application of that study is known as the most valuable source that a researcher would provide to a policy maker (Fothergill, 2000). Therefore the knowledge that is transferred from this research could help the practitioners in the Smart City discipline also to make informed decisions.

In addition to the support this study as a research renders, in convincing parties and obtaining approvals, the information produced as a result of Performance Measurement would also equip the policy makers and other parties in Smart City ecosystem with information with which solid evidence-based decisions can be made. This nature of performance data was described in 2.51 Improved decision making and 2.52 Supported strategic planning and target setting as well. They were presented as facts under 4.5 enablers to implement a Performance Measurement System to Sri Lankan Smart Cities. It can be seen that the most of the facts under 4.5 subsection are particularly to the Sri Lankan context where the initiation is the foremost stage in the Smart City case as all of the Smart Cities are just emerging and are in the feasibility stage. Therefore, the reasons that the respondents identified that could be enablers are mostly about the tasks that come in the feasibility and planning stage. For instance, the enablers like better convince, selecting and directing the team,

usefulness in defining scope, usefulness in setting goals. Apart from 2.52 these aspects were discussed under 2.51 City benchmarking as well. In Caird & Hallett's (2019) study the describes the vitality of having a "logical" system that links activities and their direct/indirect effects, outcomes, outputs and impacts with recognition of contextual factors in the initial stage of Smart City development which involves setting objectives, grouping stakeholder interests, articulating key questions, setting up the evaluation logistics and clarifying impact dimensions, the same which are brought in by the respondents in preliminary interviews.

# 4.8.2 Barriers to implement a Performance Measurement System to SMCPC

It is no wonder when the locally available experts who have gained experience working in foreign Smart Cities, conducted/ participated international workshops on Smart Cities, being confident about their knowledge. The experts believe that they have the know-how and therefore are quite not happy about the unnecessary dependency on foreign consultancy/ expertise. In Li, Easterby-Smith, Lyles, & Clark's (2016) study describes how absurd it is to not tap the locally available knowledge which is less expensive when compared to foreign expertise. However, findings of Markusen & Trofimenko's (2009) study says that foreign consultancy generates long-term productivity effects and not just offering a "temporary help" when domestic skills are not up to the satisfactory level. Therefore, the professionals in Smart City development projects could rethink specifying this as a barrier and should rather seek for foreign expertise for the aspects where local expertise is absent so that the optimal results can be ensured both in short term as well as long term.

The phrase "Inter organisational collaboration and networking" is often found in elaborating the Smart City concept and known challenging to sustain (Errichiello & Marasco, 2014). It is these operational and institutional collaborations that foster the development of Smart Cities by influencing the innovation ecosystem through the teamwork of main stakeholders alongside sharing resources, governing co-developments and safeguarding knowledge flow (Bakici, Almirall, & Wareham, 2013).

In barriers identified from literature under 2.82 point it was discussed that Performance Measurement procedure is costly and acquire resources largely. Resource demanding nature and demotivation the individuals feel after not making correct use of the efforts they have made on Performance Measurement was discussed under the study on "Performance Measurement in nonprofits: much to be gained or a waste of resources?" (Larsson & Kinnunen, 2008). In several sectors Performance Measurement criticized for evaluating only the measures the organizations can control (Hervani, Helms, & Sarkis, 2005). On the other hand, making no use of feedback on Performance Measurement data for betterment has also been criticized (Cavalluzzo & Ittner, 2004).

When performance measures are connected to an entire government jurisdiction, for instance, in a city, the particular measurement system tracks the performance over a number of services, departments, etc. such as cities' health system, transportation system, etc. which makes performance monitoring a complex task and requires people assigned for regular basis monitoring (Newcomer, Hatry, & Wholey, 2015). The time and cost of performance can be therefore higher owing to the effort spent on monitoring (Chan, 2003). Being a city, this applies to Smart City context as well.

The need of a dynamic Performance Measurement System for high tech industries is described in Lee & Lai (2007) 's research. Smart Cities encompassing new types of innovations developments (Schaffers, Komninos, & Pallot, 2012), require the Performance Measurement System also to be regularly updated and act comprehensively in the dynamic environment. This would require somewhat of an effort which is challenging as per the experts. According to Bititci et al. (2000), absence of a structured Performance Measurement System, lack of flexibility in the platform to allows organisations to efficiently and effectively manage the dynamics and inability in quantifying the relationships between measures within the system are the main barriers for an organization to adopt a dynamic approach in performance measurement. However, as this Performance Measurement System ensures that Performance Measurement course remains integrated, updated and sensitive to external changes at all times, the challenge will be limited. In fact, Ankrah & Proverbs's (2005) study implied it is mostly up to party that measure performance

and appropriately refine the criteria when the Performance Measurement System includes dynamic measures.

Large number of studies discuss methods to prioritise key performance indicators in a Performance Measurement System alongside effectively managing different stakeholder interests due to the largely raised concerns on that in the journey of successful performance measuring (Vachnadze, 2016). Moreover, the vital issue of understanding the most critical stakeholder needs that comply with smartness objectives in the Smart City is commonly discussed as a general challenge in Performance Measurement regardless the industry (Arena, Azzone, & Bengo, 2015). Similarly, manipulation of results and subjective content are that common and the possible manipulation are to a certain extent accepted and provided measures to minimize (Arya & Glover, 2008).

#### 4.8.3 Solutions to the identified barriers

According to Amaratunga, Baldry, & Sarshar (2001), an instrumental Performance Measurement System should essentially reflect the objectives and strategy of the organization to which it is applied. However, one reason even carefully outlined Performance Measurement Systems to go wrong is when they assume the existence of clearly stated objectives and strategy of the organization to where it is applied (Li & Tang, 2009). Further the inconsistency of the stated strategy and undertaken strategy leads the Performance Measurement System to fail (Parker, 2000). While the experts mentioned that performance measures should be in line with the organisational objectives, the literature emphasised the importance of having a firmly established strategy and objective before outlining performance measures. Therefore, formulating the organisation's strategy and objectives should be the starting point in matching the performance measures with that (Johnsen, 1999). Further the importance of the clarity of performance measures and making all the parties aware about the impact of different performance measures is widely discussed (Ittner & Larcker, 2003; Lau, 2011; Wang, Law, & Chen, 2008). Working together as a team having roles and tasks understood is is difficult yet an effective way of designing effective team-based Performance Measurement Systems (Mendibil & MacBryde, 2005), which can be mostly relevant to SMCPC.

Moreover, in Tung, Baird, & Schoch's (2011) research the importance of collaborative approach in improving performance as well as measuring performance is specified. With an integrated approach Performance Measurement can be made productive in terms of joint planning and decision making, process integration, enhancing each other's capacity for mutual benefits and to focus on the common purpose and share resources (Pekkola & Ukko, 2016).

Kostakis, Bauwens, & Niaros (2015) in their study promotes having social enterprises established within Smart Cities aiming long term development and sustainability instead of seeking easy financial gains. In fact social enterprises have similar characteristics that Smart Cities have, like, principle aim having to serve the community to upgrade wellbeing, participative management, involvement of heterogeneous set of stakeholders, etc. (Defourny & Nyssens, 2007). In addition, social enterprises are diversified as they operate in various fields such as commercial and financial services, health and social services having different organizational structures and relationships with different sectors (Alter, 2007), just like in the case of Smart Cities. Arena, Azzone, & Bengo (2015) identified the need of managing and prioritising different information needs, different metrics for evaluating performance and basically all expectations from stakeholders resulted in due to the aforementioned diversification.

According to Behn (2003) appraising the most significant performance measures is such a complicated task as some measures which are particularly suitable for one purpose may not be useless at all for another purpose. One suggestion given is to identify key processes in the organization, value adding areas and indicators that can influence these processes and areas so as to select an appropriate set of performance measures directly linked with the organisational performance (Gunasekaran & Kobu, 2007). In translating theory in to practice the measures including how each measure should be specified, to which level of details should be look for, how often they ought to be measured, etc. (Tangen, 2004).

Performance Measurement indeed is one way which can bring transparency to public sector (Bruijn, 2002). Strengthening accountability of an organisation's operations through the transparency maintained in Performance Measurement process is known as an important part which measurement practitioners shouldn't missed (Melitski & Manoharan, 2014). However, measuring performance create negative consequences no matter the control extended and general remedies mentioned in Grizzle (2002) study were related to The American Society for Public Administration's Code of Ethics, The International City/County Management Association's Code of Ethics and the Government Finance Officers Association's Code of Ethics, demonstrates the importance of adhering to measurement practitioners' own set of code of ethics. Experts suggested a best practice so as to adopt characteristic of agile practices and the features of agile practice are described related to Performance Measurement in several studies. For example, rapid obtaining of feedback (Mausolff, 2004), setting value-based priorities (Gunasekaran & Kobu, 2007), working as small teams (Laitinen, 2002), engaging users to refine requirement (Taticchi, Cocca, & Alberti, 2010).

#### 4.8.4 The Suitable List of Performance Measures for the SMCPC

The Performance Measurement System (see Figure 4.10) is referred together with the list of Performance Measures (see Table 4.3). The Performance Measurement System comprised of 7 themes, namely, Smart Economy, Smart People, Smart Living, Smart Governance, Smart Mobility, Smart Environment and Propagation, with a special emphasis on people factor (Smart People), technology factor (Smart Mobility: ICT infrastructure) and the critical success factors as mentioned in Propagation theme. The interrelationships between the themes are shown. The list was prepared mainly based on Giffinger et. al.'s (2007) Performance Measures although several Performance Measurement Systems were referred (see 2.6 Evaluation of Performance Measurement Systems in Chapter 2).

Hamza (2015) who has done a study on Smart Cities in developing countries used the Performance Measurement System developed by Giffinger et. al. (2007) as a base to develop a Performance Measurement System to Egypt. He has included smart economy, smart people, smart governance, smart mobility and connectivity, smart environment, smart quality of life, smart institutions, smart infrastructure while emphasising the four development processes: community development, economic development, political development, and ecological development and specified that weight and description of each of these themes may differ depending on the economy, political, and social condition of a country/ city/ society. Similarly, Vu & Hartley (2018) who have studied about Smart Cities in developing coutries have considered smart economy, smart human capital development, smart governance, smart environment and smart infrastructure as suitable to Vietnam. One another study on Smart Cities in developing economies, highlighted the underdeveloped community needs in India and came up with themes energy management, health hazard management, urban mobility, water supply sanitation, solid waste management, storm and rain water harvesting, electricity, internet and telephone, urban development, education, entertainment and good sports facilities and social media (Chatterjee & Kar, 2015). Another study which was done based on developing countries where the case was Brazil mentioned the themes under political and governance, technological and sociocultural aspects (De Mello Miranda, da Cunha, & Pugas Filho, 2016). In Kono, Suwa, & Ahmad's (2016) study which studied ways of adopting SC principles in developing country cities considered energy, water, transportation and waste under various economic conditions. It can be seen that all the themes the aforementioned researchers have considered in their studies, have been covered in thein the list of Performance Measures for SMCPC which is the most important component in the developed Performance Measurement System for SMCPC. In addition to that, considering the fact that proposed Smart City is emerging not just from a developing economy/ country but aiming a world class city the Performance Measurement System incorporated possible future developments as well. In fact, according to Peris-Ortiz, Bennett, & Yábar (2017) developing countries sometimes embrace possible Smart City innovations faster and successfully than developed countries.

The experts talked about "an open API which contains a wide range of rich data that can instigate creative projects to emerge from public", when discussing projects funded by civil society. In Hamilton & Zhu's (2017) study which was about funding and financing Smart Cities, this was further explained as financing though data monetizing where the third-party developers who are willing to develop applications using city data are charged for data access. Hamilton & Zhu (2017) brought in the parking space app as an example. Further, Paskaleva (2011) mentioned that open 'digital citizen-developer' communities are important in Smart Cities to trigger open innovation in urban development.

As discussed in 4.4 Suitability of the listed Performance Measures : 4.41 Smart Economy, the modifications on certain Performance Measures can be discussed relating to the literature. Both problems and solutions in the Smart Cities have an impact on all stakeholder groups directly or indirectly, although to differing extents; and so are the financial benefits (Marrone & Hammerle, 2018). In understanding the financial performance of Smart Cities, it is important to look at the economic benefits main stakeholder groups get in return for their investment and hope (Babar, 2016).

Although incubators, Science and Technology (S&T) parks, technology transfer and innovation centres were not a part of the initial CPC plan, they were kept when raised as indicators since they have a development potential. Santos (2018) names them as knowledge intensive structures which should be placed in a Smart City to capitalise the knowledge stock which is a productive and cost-effective way to conduct research, develop technology, and encourage new businesses.

Business and job creation are two of the economic outcomes of Smart City initiatives while fostering economic growth and attracting skilled workforce (Alawadhi et. al., 2012). Further, the jobs created due to Smart Cities are more towards white and collar jobs while the usual blue-collar jobs that are in demand for city services remain (Bronstein, 2009).

The profitability of a Smart City project can be important for the investors of that project, yet, does not indicate the smartness of that city (Cosgrave, Tryfonas, &

Crick, 2014). Although Net Present Value (NPV) and the Internal Rate of Return (IRR) are suitable tools to evaluate the profitability of a project (Perrone, 2014), as per the experts they may not indicate the smartness. Further, just as experts mentioned, GDP can be a measure of sector strength of smart services (Barrionuevo, Berrone, & Ricart, 2012).

Some of the modifications on certain Performance Measures in Smart Living theme as discussed in 4.4 Suitability of the listed Performance Measures: 4.43 Smart Living can be related to the literature. According to Harrison (2017), the assumed users of the Smart City can be expecting and willing for a luxurious living or longing for a one step above the existing poverty, regardless the both situations, the understanding of the citizen–technology relationships must be reached. However, even in the luxury living condition, the housing costs and disposable annual household income may reflect the smartness of a Smart City as the smart features should have the affordability along with their beneficial use (Gascó-Hernandez, 2018).

Emerging Smart Cities have a tendency to use of "smart cards" for payment as a convenient way to the customers as the transactions become "cash less" (Singh, Mathur, Das, Sinha, & Singh, 2017). People in a Smart City with their flexibility can achieve greater efficiencies with the laissez faire growth for which any country should also do a cost benefit analysis beforehand (Batty, et al., 2012).

Factors that upgrade the lives of Smart Cities' citizen is one reason that can leverage the society's potential to appeal talented employment (Stratigea, 2012). Some researchers look at Smart Cities as a combination of facilities (Marcus & Koch, 2016). Reducing waiting time, service delays and lengthy queues have been a trend adopted by Smart Cities and mostly been discussed with reference to smart mobility (Munir, Abedin, Alam, Tran, & Hong, 2018). While Intelligent Transportation Systems and related technologies are deployed globally in Smart Cities, connected and autonomous vehicles and fully automated transportation systems are under wide field testing (Menouar, et al., 2017). When a Smart City is activated with its safe city applications theft and crime would no longer take place; a recent example is Barcelona (Bakıcı, Almirall, & Wareham, 2013). Further, the citizens in the Smart City will hold their right to contribute or actively participate in the political arena and at the same time more importantly they should be satisfied with the practice (Vázquez & Vicente, 2019)

# 4.9 Summary

The collected data are analysed until it forms two lists of performance measures; 1) to be used in the performance measurement in SMCPC and 2) to be used in the performance measurement in emerging Smart Cities in Sri Lanka. The Performance Measurement System formed could be used in both the situations and the suitable list should be referred in each respective case. Further the importance of implementing a Performance Measurement System can be used to convince any related party in the Smart Cities scenario. The provided solutions can be used in the case where barriers are encountered during Performance Measurement in Smart Cities.

# **CHAPTER 05**

# **CONCLUSIONS AND RECOMMENDATIONS**

#### 5.1 Introduction

The chapter purposes to conclude the research findings by providing shrewd recommendations farsightedly. The limitations to achieve the research objectives are mentioned as well. Additionally, the suggestions to carry out further studies and the unearthed and barely researched concept are also specified.

#### 5.2 Conclusions under the research objectives

Under each research objective as mentioned in aim and objectives (Section 1.3), their conclusions and followed methodology are presented described as follows;

# **5.2.1** Objective 1: To investigate the characteristics of Smart Cities globally and with particular reference to Sri Lanka.

This objective was achieved through several step as it consisted two main parts; a general study on smart characteristics through Section 2.3 Characteristics of Smart Cities and Section 2.7 A Comprehensive list of Performance Measures for Smart Cities and specific smart characteristics applicable to Sri Lanka through Section 4.4 Suitability of the listed Performance Measures (from literature) to SMCPC, Section 4.5 Suitability of the listed Performance Measures of SMCPC to general Sri Lankan context and Section 4.8.4 The Suitable List of Performance Measures for the SMCPC. As there were no literature evidence found regarding the Sri Lankan case, only the general study was done with the literature review. Alternatively, for the Sri Lankan case the smart characteristics were identified from the case study (Section 4.4 Suitability of the listed Performance Measures (from literature) to SMCPC) and questionnaire survey (Section 4.5 Suitability of the listed Performance Measures of SMCPC to general Sri Lankan context). While there was no consensus reached regarding the characteristics of Smart City, this study has taken three approaches to investigate smart characteristics. That was to explore the literature evidences through studying elements that formed Smart City definitions (Section 2.3.1 Elements of recent Smart City definitions), by reviewing similar city conceptualisations (Section 2.3.2 Comparison of city conceptualisations with Smart City initiatives) and by examining Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities (Section 2.7 A Comprehensive list of Performance Measures for Smart Cities). In studying Smart City definitional elements ten Smart City definitions that were put forward in year 2019 were selected. As the concept was said to be an evolving one only the most recent definitions were selected. In essence two mainstreams ICT and technologyoriented approach and people-oriented approach were identified under which the characteristics like aims to upgrade the quality of life of its citizens and sustain the urban system development; urban innovations; critical infrastructure and information management; modern advanced and intelligent ICT applications; sustainable urban environment, satisfaction and well-being of citizen, encouraged community participation, optimum utilization of resource, well-performing governance, sustainable economic growth, etc. were presented. Thereafter, similar city conceptualisations like digital city, intelligent city, ubiquitous city (U-city), global city and sustainable cities were compared with Smart City concept to identify the unique Smart City characteristics. Similarly, the Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities contained smart characteristics in the form of performance measures/ indicators. Therefore, they were identified with the thorough review of existing Performance Measurement Systems which was done as a part of achieving objective three. Consequently, this approach was the ideal to identify the characteristics of a Sri Lankan Smart City as well. Therefore, at the end of Objective 4 the smart characteristics for the Sri Lankan context will also be represented in the form of the Performance Measures in the Performance Measurement System for Sri Lankan Smart Cities.

# **5.2.2** Objective 2: To investigate the importance of Performance Measurement in Smart City development.

The first objective was accomplished with the literature review (Section 2.5 Importance of Performance Measurement in Smart City Development) where it was identified that Performance Measurement is important to Smart Cities context as well, just like it is in all other industries. The importance was discussed under several

topics namely, performance management, monitoring and control, improved decision making, accountability, strengthened local democratic institutions, supported strategic planning and target setting, improved communication, continuous improvement, overall success of the organisation, funding purpose, city benchmarking, politically valuable outcomes in contested environments and civic support for public efforts. Performance Measurement is important as it gives the basis for performance management in a Smart City. With Performance Measurement better monitoring coupled with a controlling procedure and better communication among individuals is facilitated. A Performance Measurement System could be used as a guidance tool in determining the benchmarks, strategic planning and target setting. Further to the literature findings, in preliminary interviews the respondents were asked the reasons for this study to proceed. Their reasoning also added new facts to the discussion on the importance of Performance Measurement to Smart Cities with particular reference to the Sri Lankan case, and therefore highlighting the benefits of Performance Measurement in the initial stage of emerging Smart Cities. The respondents highlighted the scientific backup an evidence based study could bring in the Smart City development stage which involves obtaining approvals/ funds, making parties understand, etc most of which can be easily done with better convicing through a research done before the practical application of the Performance Measurement System. In addion to that the other benefits include the ease in selecting and directing the team, usefulness in defining scope, usefulness in setting goals, guidance and motivation to the team and monitoring and control.

# **5.2.3** Objective 3: To synthesize different Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities.

This was purely done by the literature synthesis (Section 2.6 Evaluation of Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities) and provided a base to achieve Objective 4. Out of several Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities, 8 were selected. The basis for the selection was the holistic nature of the Performance Measurement System and its ability to cover all Smart City dimensions and not one/few. The selected Performance Measurement Systems were from the studies carried out under Bosch et al. (2016), Giffinger et al. (2007), Lombardi et al. (2012),

Komninos (2008), Merli and Bonollo (2014), Shen et al. (2018), Australian Government (2017) and Ambrosetti, (2012). From the existing Performance Measurement Systems seven themes were identified to be the most significant and they are smart economy, smart people, smart living, smart governance, smart environment, smart mobility and propagation. The existing Performance Measurement Systems were more or less looked alike containing three parts themes, subthemes under themes and Performance Measurement indicators. With the identified themes a list of Performance Measures for Smart Cities was produced which contained 256 Performance Measurement indicators. This was given to the experts to evaluate the applicability for SMCPC in the case study interview round.

# **5.2.4** Objective 4: To identify the barriers to implement a Performance Measurement System to Sri Lanka and recommended solutions to overcome the barriers.

Barriers were searched in a similar way the enablers were searched. It started with the literature review (Section 2.8 Barriers for Performance Measurement in Smart Cities) and thereafter in preliminary interview round again asked about (Section 4.6 Barriers to implement a Performance Measurement System to SMCPC: Findings from preliminary interviews (Stage 1)), together with the enablers (Section 4.3 Importance of implementing a Performance Measurement System to Sri Lankan Smart Cities). The listed-out barriers from literature review were Performance Measurement System implementation problems, increased cost over benefits, multiple interests of different parties engaged in a Smart City project, limitations and unavailability of technological implications that cause delays in information and automation issues in the process of Performance Measurement, difficulties in obtaining information including the lack of accessibility for databases, data availability and data management issues, privacy issues, increased workload to the individuals in the Smart City management organisation that intents to measure performance, problems due to the human involvement; for example, political undue interventions and influences, lack of integration and the internal resistance from the parties that are affected differently from Performance Measurement. Similar facts and some additional facts were obtained from preliminary interviews. The facts that

were not repeated in the literature review and were found from preliminary interview include, human barrier due to lack of trust on local expertise and dislike towards collaboration, waste of resources due to lack of control, problems with monitoring in real time, dynamic nature of measurement, prioritizing issues, subjective input and manipulation of results.

The experts in the case study round were requested to provide solutions to overcome the identified barriers. By looking at the barriers the experts have provided a set of solutions which can be also called as expert suggestions to improve the successful implementation of Performance Measurement or the best practices in implementing a Performance Measurement System in Smart City context. The suggestions are to making Performance Measurement relevant by ensuring the relevance of performance measures to Smart Cities' objectives and strategy and also by making sure the measuring practitioners and other involved parties are clear about the measures and individual impact on measures; prioritizing most appropriate measures, distinct stakeholder interests and information needs; using right performance measures and the right mix of lagging and leading indicators; taking an integrated approach by involving all parties for the process; improving transparency by making performance data available to the parties that need them; adhering to appropriate codes of ethics and adopting agile practices (described in Section 4.7 Solutions to the identified barriers: Findings from Case Study (Stage 2)).

All in all, the first Performance Measurement System developed is supposed to provide a guidance in refining objectives, measuring performance and overall decision making in developing the SMCPC whist the second Performance Measurement System which is having a scoring system will be useful in immediate use for emerging Smart Cities in Sri Lanka.

# **5.2.5** Objective 5: To develop a Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities in Sri Lanka.

The study consisted two development phases in producing a Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities in Sri Lanka. The first phase was specific to a unique case study in Sri Lanka and the second phase was generic and for an immediate application. The first Performance Measurement System (Figure 4.10: Performance Measurement System suitable for Sri Lankan Smart Cities) which was produced aiming the SMCPC provided a base for the generic Performance Measurement System. The difference lies with the listed Performance Measures in the two scenarios. The first Performance Measurement System contained Performance Measures considering potential technological and social developments (Section 4.4 Suitability of the listed Performance Measures (from literature) to SMCPC and list without scores as per Section 4.5.3 Allocation of scores to indicators within the sub-themes), while the second Performance Measurement System (the generic Performance Measures specific to SMCPC case and Performance Measures to which data weren't available in the current Sri Lankan scenario. However, even the second Performance Measures (list of Performance Measures) had provisions for customizing yet covered all dimensions in an emerging Smart City.

#### **5.3 Recommendations**

In terms of Smart Cities and Performance Measurement Sri Lanka is in a naïve stage and therefore, there is a room for improvement in technical aspects as well as attitudinal changes. While most of the solutions for barriers were presented in the form of recommendations, some of the generic recommendations are as follows;

# 5.3.1 Develop a Smart City policy

In the current stage Sri Lanka is lacking a Smart City policy. Having a Smart City policy Smart City laws and policies can be enforced so that they can detail on providing consent for data gathering, data protecting, how that data can be used / shared, privacy and personal information protection.

#### 5.3.2 Maintaining databases

It is obvious that data plays the most vital role in Smart Cities. However, in Sri Lanka one of the challenges to work on Smart City initiatives and then Smart Cities, is the data unavailability. In most of the times the developments planned on the infrastructure or services as an initiative to implement Smart Cities halt when the data required for development are lacking to proceed. One example was the cease of planned improvements on plumbing services as part of a smart initiative of a municipal council. Although this will not be a challenge for SMCPC being newly building city, for other cities in Sri Lanka, data should be in place and databases should be available.

#### 5.3.3 Infrastructure development

Mostly the available infrastructures are not in a position to facilitate the smart initiatives/ smart services in Sri Lanka. SMCPC on the other hand has the competitive advantage of building the infrastructure completely from the beginning. Basic infrastructure network should therefore be improved prior planning Smart Cities.

#### 5.3.4 University and organisational level awareness programs

The practices on Performance Measurement as well as knowledge on Smart Cities should be communicated to the lowest and most critical level in means of education. Therewith costly training can be avoided and the interested parties can further study and learn so that experienced professionals on these areas would be there, which is lacking in the current context.

# 5.3.5 Focus on nature based/ green infrastructure and provisions for disaster resilience

It can be seen that the developed Performance Measurement System doesn't consist anything related to the above two areas. However, it is obvious that Smart Cities having a higher initial cost should be sustainable. Therefore, disasters resilience needs consideration for other emerging cities as it is there in the SMCPC.

# 5.4 Limitations

The depth of knowledge on Smart Cities was almost untouched and barely known in the Sri Lanka which resulted in create of different interpretations on the themes/ subthemes and indicators. However, this was avoided by providing clarifications for each and every indicator and by researcher attending to the interviews/ survey data collection, face to face as much as possible. Yet, the Performance Measurement Systems being lengthy as a result of making them comprehensive, given the limited time, surveys were limited to a small sample size. Similarly, most of the interviews were conducted for two days. Moreover, most of the information that are helpful in the study were not provided as they are confidential and the Smart City objectives and potential smart experts have changed from time to time since the start of this study. Therefore, the researcher while trying to update the information as much as possible had to collect data from all the smart experts. Further the experts were not familiar with the Battelle method and as a result some of the respondents have given marks without complying to the method. Most importantly, the impact of performance measurement is not longitudinal, therefore with the given period of one year of the study the results cannot be obtained and therefore the researcher is unable to do get benefits of a learning curve.

#### **5.5 Further research**

• Developing criteria to assess the smartness based on the scores

The scoring system developed through this study can be applied to any type of an emerging Smart City in Sri Lanka and it is supposed to define the smartness of such an emerging Smart City in Sri Lanka. However, there can be certain requirements some cities demand through Smart Cities and to cater the requirement several other smartness requirements may be overlooked, due to reasons like cost restrictions. As a result, the scoring system will not produce the full score. In such situations, those Smart Cities, will need an indication on their smartness for the scores they achieved. This needs to be studied further based on the case studies and past studies.

• Developing definitions and measurement criteria for the indicators

Indicators in the developed Performance Measurement System/ scoring system needs definitions for what exact aspects to look in to make the measurement standardized, so that the outcome can be compared with the other projects which

used these tools achieved from this research. For an instance; the indicator "An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emission reduction strategy", needs further explainations on how to conduct this assessments, which data to be used and the measurement criteria relating to the Sri Lankan scenario through a further study.

A study which can provide a reliable scientific justification and generate the above two criteria will be essential for the practical applications of the Performance Measurement System/ scoring system for emerging Smart Cities in Sri Lanka.

• Developing Performance Measurement Systems weighting different themes particularly for certain cities

Even though the research outcomes define the smartness requirements for a Smart City in Sri Lanka, not having a shared definition entertains different suggestions by the Smart City experts. One such important suggestions the experts involved in this study mentioned is, every city need to find their suitable Smart City theme. In other words, cities should identify and prioritise the solutions that they need through Smart Cities and their competitive advantages that can be facilitated through Smart Cities for the development and sustainability of that urban ecosystem. Therefore, this study can be further developed based on the different themes that different cities emphasise on (for example: Performance Measurement System to develop a smart agriculture city in Anuradhapura).

• Developing a Smart City policy for Sri Lanka

This would be the most important study that is recommended from this research as it is the Smart City policy that can be termed as the heart in the development of Smart Cities.

# References

- Abbas, H., Shaheen, S., & Amin, M. (2019). Engineering large complex critical infrastructures of future smart cities as self-adaptive systems. In *Security in Smart Cities: Models, Applications, and Challenges* (pp. 143-170). Springer, Cham.
- Adolphus, K., Lawton, C. L., & Dye, L. (2013). The effects of breakfast on behavior and academic performance in children and adolescents. *Frontiers in human neuroscience*, 7, 425.
- Afonso, R. A., Brito, K. S., Nascimento, C. H., Gracia, V. C., & Álvaro, A. (2015). Brazilian smart cities: Using a maturity model to measure and compare inequality in cities. *Proceedings of the 16th Annual International Conference* on Digital Government Research, (pp. 230-238). ACM.
- Ahvenniemi, H., Huovila, A., Pinto-Seppä, I., & Airaksinen, M. (2017). What are the differences between sustainable and smart cities?. *Cities*, 60, 234–245. Retrieved from http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.cities.2016.09.009
- Airaksinen, M., Seppä, I. P., Huovila, A., Neumann, H. M., Iglar, B., & Bosch, P. (2017, June). Smart city performance measurement framework CITYkeys. In 2017 International Conference on Engineering, Technology and Innovation (ICE/ITMC) (pp. 718-723). IEEE.
- Al Zefeiti, S. M., & Mohamad, N. A. (2015). Methodological Considerations in Studying Transformational Leadership and its Outcomes. *International Journal of Engineering Business Management*, 7(10), 1-11. doi:10.5772/60429
- Alawadhi, S., Aldama-Nalda, A., Chourabi, H., Gil-Garcia, J. R., Leung, S., Mellouli, S., ... & Walker, S. (2012, September). Building understanding of smart city initiatives. In *International conference on electronic* government (pp. 40-53). Springer, Berlin, Heidelberg

- Albino, V., Berardi, U., & Dangelico, R. M. (2015). Smart cities: Definitions, dimensions, performance, and initiatives. *Journal of urban technology*, 22(1), 3-21.
- Alkandari A., Alnasheet M., & Alshekhly, I.F. (2012). Smart cities: Survey. *Journal* of Advanced Computer Science and Technology Research, 2(2), 79–90.
- Alter, K. (2007). Social enterprise typology. Virtue ventures LLC, 12(1), 1-124.

Alvi, M. (2016). A manual for selecting sampling techniques in research.

- Amaratunga, D., Baldry, D., & Sarshar, M. (2001). Process improvement through performance measurement: the balanced scorecard methodology. 50(5), 179-188.
- Amaratunga, D., Baldry, D., Sharshar, M., & Newton, R. (2002). Quantitative and qualitative research in built environment: application of "mixed" research approach. *Work Study*, 51(1), 17-31.
- Ambrosetti, F. (2012). Smart cities in Italy: An opportunity in the spirit of the renaissance for a new quality of life. *ABB-The European House Ambrosetti*.
- Angelidou, M. (2014). Smart city policies: A spatial approach. Cities, 41, S3-S11.
- Angelidou, M. (2017). The role of smart city characteristics in the plans of fifteen cities. *Journal of Urban Technology*, 24(4), 3-28.
- Ankrah, N. A., & Proverbs, D. (2005). A framework for measuring construction project performance: Overcoming key challenges of performance measurement. 21st Annual ARCOM Conference, 2, pp. 959-969.
- Anthopoulos, L., Janssen, M., & Weerakkody, V. (2019). A Unified Smart City Model (USCM) for smart city conceptualization and benchmarking. *In Smart cities and smart spaces: Concepts, methodologies, tools, and applications,* (pp. 247-264). IGI Global.

- Anttiroiko, A. V., Valkama, P., & Bailey, S. J. (2014). Smart cities in the new service economy: building platforms for smart services. AI & Society, 29(3), 323-334.
- Antwi, S. K., & Hamza, K. (2015). Qualitative and quantitative research paradigms in business research: A philosophical reflection. *European Journal of Business and Management*, 7(3), 217-225.
- Arena, M., Azzone, G., & Bengo, I. (2015). Performance measurement for social enterprises. VOLUNTAS: International Journal of Voluntary and Nonprofit Organizations, 26(2), 649-672.
- Arya, A., & Glover, J. (2008). Performance measurement manipulation: cherrypicking what to correct. *Review of Accounting Studies*, 13(1), 119-139.
- Australian Government. (2017). Smart cities plan: National cities performance framework - final report. *Commonwealth of Australia*. Retrieved from https://www.infrastructure.gov.au/cities/national-cities-performanceframework/files/National\_Cities\_Performance\_Framework\_Final\_Report.pdf
- Awuzie, B., & McDermott, P. (2017). An abductive approach to qualitative built environment research: A viable system methodological exposé. *Qualitative Research Journal*, 17(4), 356-372. Retrieved from https://doi.org/10.1108/QRJ-08-2016-0048
- Babar, A. (2016). Smart cities: Socio-technical innovation for empowering citizens. AQ-Australian Quarterly, 87(3), 18-25.
- Bacon-Shone, J. (2015). Introduction to quantitative research methods. Hong Kong: Graduate School, The University of Hong Kong. Retrieved from file:///C:/Users/User/Downloads/IQRM\_book\_2020\_Jan\_28.pdf
- Bakıcı, T., Almirall, E., & Wareham, J. (2013). A smart city initiative: The case of Barcelona. *Journal of The Knowledge Economy*, 4(2), 135-148.

- Bandara, H. M., Jayalath, J. D., Rodrigo, A. R., Bandaranayake, A. U., Maraikar, Z., & Ragel, R. G. (2016). Smart campus phase one: Smart parking sensor network. *Manufacturing & Industrial Engineering Symposium (MIES)* (pp. 1-16). IEEE.
- Barrionuevo, J. M., Berrone, P., & Ricart, J. E. (2012). Smart cities, sustainable progress. *Iese Insight*, 14(14), 50-57.
- Batagan, L., (2011). Indicators for economic and social development of future smart city. *Journal of Applied Quantitative Methods*, 6(3), pp. 27-34.
- Batty, M., Axhausen, K. W., Giannotti, F., Pozdnoukhov, A., Bazzani, A., Wachowicz, M., & Portugali, Y. (2012). Smart cities of the future. *The European Physical Journal Special Topics*, 214(1), 481-518.
- Baxter, P., & Jack, S. (2008). Qualitative case study methodology: Study design and implementation for novice researchers. *The qualitative report*, *13*(4), 544-559.
- Behn, R. D. (2003). Why measure performance? Different purposes require different measures. *Public Administration Review*, 63(5), 586-606.
- Bhattacharyya, D. K. (2006). *Research methodology*. New Delhi: Excel Books. Retrieved from https://books.google.lk/books?id=k6pMrsB5T\_oC&printsec=frontcover&sou rce=gbs\_atb#v=onepage&q&f=false
- Bifulco, F., Tregua, M., Amitrano, C. C., & D'Auria, A. (2016). ICT and sustainability in smart cities management. *International Journal of Public Sector Management*.
- Bititci, U., Garengo, P., Dörfler, V., & Nudurupati, S. (2012). Performance measurement: challenges for tomorrow. *International journal of management reviews*, 14(3), 305-327.

- Bititci, U. S., Turner, U., & Begemann, C. (2000). Dynamics of performance measurement systems. *International Journal of Operations & Production Management*, 20(6), 692-704.
- Bjørnholt, B., & Larsen, F. (2014). The politics of performance measurement: 'Evaluation use as mediator for politics'. *Evaluation*, 20(4), 400-411.
- Blanche, M. T., Blanche, M. J., Durrheim, K., & Painter , D. (2006). Research in practice: Applied methods for the social sciences. Juta and Company Ltd.
- Blanck, M., Ribeiro, J. L. & Anzanello, M. J., (2019). A relational exploratory study of business incubation and smart cities- Findings from Europe. *Cities*, 88, pp. 48-58.
- Bolívar, M. P. R. (2018). Creative citizenship: The new wave for collaborative environments in smart cities. *Academia revista latinoamericana de administración*.
- Bosch, P., Jongeneel, S., Rovers, V., Neumann, H.-M., Airaksinen , M., & Huovila,A. (2016). Deliverable 1.4 Smart city KPIs and related methodology final.CITYkeys.
- Bouckaert, G. & Halligan, J. (2008). *Managing performance: International comparisons*. London: Routledge.
- Brikci, N. (2007). A guide to using qualitative research methodology. Retrieved from http://fieldresearch.msf.org/msf/bitstream/10144/84230/1/Qualitative%20rese arch%20methodology.pdf

Bronstein, Z. (2009). Industry and the smart city. *Dissent*, 56(3), 27-34.

Brorström, S., Argento, D., Grossi, G., Thomasson , A., & Almqvist, R. (2018). Translating sustainable and smart city strategies into performance measurement systems. *Public Money & Management*, 38(3), 193-201.

- Bruijn, H. D. (2002). Performance measurement in the public sector: strategies to cope with the risks of performance measurement. *International Journal of Public Sector Management*, 15(7), 578-594.
- Caird, S. (2017). City approaches to smart city evaluation and reporting: case studies in the United Kingdom. Urban Research & Practice. Retrieved from http://dx.doi.org/10.1080/17535069.2017.1317828
- Caird, S. P., & Hallett, S. H. (2019). Towards evaluation design for smart city development. *Journal of urban Design*, 24(2), 188-209.
- Caragliu, A., Del Bo, C., & Nijkamp, P. (2011). Smart cities in Europe. *Journal of urban technology*, 18(2), 65-82.
- Carli, R., Dotolia, M., Pellegrino, R., & Ranieri, L. (2013). Measuring and managing the smartness of cities: A framework for classifying performance indicators. *IEEE International Conference on Systems, Man, and Cybernetics* (pp. 1288-1293). IEEE.
- Carnochan, S., Samples, M., & Myers, M. (2014). Performance measurement challenges in nonprofit human service organizations. *Nonprofit and Voluntary Sector Quarterly*, 43(6). doi:10.1177/0899764013508009
- Castellan, C. M. (2010). Quantitative and qualitative research: A view for clarity. *International Journal of Education*, 2(2), 1-13. Retrieved from http://www.dphu.org/uploads/attachements/books/books\_951\_0.pdf
- Cavalluzzo, K. S., & Ittner, C. D. (2004). Implementing performance measurement innovations: evidence from government. *Accounting, organizations and society*, 29(3-4), 243-267.
- Chan, F. T. (2003). Performance measurement in a supply chain. *The International Journal of Advanced Manufacturing Technology*, 21(7), 534-548.
- Chatterjee, S., & Kar, A. K. (2015). Smart Cities in developing economies: A literature review and policy insights. 2015 International Conference on

Advances in Computing, Communications and Informatics (ICACCI) (pp. 2335-2340). IEEE.

- CHEC Port City Colombo (Pvt) Ltd. (2019). CHEC Port City Colombo (Pvt) Ltd -Sri Lanka. Retrieved from www.portcitycolombo.lk: http://www.portcitycolombo.lk/about/
- Chen, T. M. (2010). Smart grids, smart cities need better networks [Editor's Note]. *IEEE Network*, 24(2), 2-3.
- Chourabi, H., Nam, T., Walker, S., Gil-Garcia, J. R., Mellouli, S., Nahon, K., & Scholl, H. J. (2012, January). Understanding smart cities: An integrative framework. *In 2012 45th Hawaii international conference on system sciences* (pp. 2289-2297). IEEE.
- Cosgrave, E., Tryfonas, T., & Crick, T. (2014). The smart city from a public value perspective. *ICT for Sustainability 2014 (ICT4S-14)*. Atlantis Press.
- DailyMirror. (2019, March 26). SLT-Huawei to partner for Colombo Port City's Smart City project. Retrieved from DailyMirror: http://www.dailymirror.lk/business-news/SLT-Huawei-to-partner-for-Colombo-Port-City%E2%80%99s-Smart-City-project/273-164496
- Dameri, R. P. (2015). Urban tableau de bord: Measuring smart city performance. *From Information to Smart Society* (pp. 173-180). Cham: Springer.
- Dameri, R. P. (2017). Smart city definition, goals and performance. In *Smart City Implementation* (pp. 1-22). Cham: Springer .
- Dameri, R. P., & Garelli, R. (2014, September). Measuring business benefits and performance in smart cities. In *European Conference on Innovation and Entrepreneurship* (p. 137). Academic Conferences International Limited.
- Dameri, R. P., & Rosenthal-Sabroux, C. (2014). Smart city and value creation. In *R. P. Dameri, & C. Rosenthal-Sabroux, Smart City: How to Create Public and*

*Economic Value with High Technology in Urban Space* (pp. 1-12). London: Springer. doi:10.1007/978-3-319-06160-3

- De Mello Miranda, P. R., da Cunha, M. A., & Pugas Filho, J. M. (2016). eParticipation in smart cities of developing countries: Research-based practical recommendations. *Smarter as the New Urban Agenda* (pp. 315-332). Springer, Cham. doi:10.1007/978-3-319-17620-8\_17
- De Silva, P. H. (2017). Role of international and national standards in improving quality of life in urban environments in Sri Lanka. *Cities People Places*, 1(2), 1-9.
- De Vries, M. S. (2010). Performance measurement and the search for best practices. *International Review of Administrative Sciences*, 76(2), 313-330. Retrieved from https://journals.sagepub.com/doi/pdf/10.1177/0020852309365668
- De Zoysa, I. (2017). Smart City: Sri Lanka's next step towards a viable future. Retrieved from AsianSun.
- Defourny, J., & Nyssens, M. (2007). Defining social enterprise. *Social Enterprise*, pp. 19-42.
- Dissanayake, P., Hettiarachchi, S., & Siriwardana, C. (2018). Increase in disaster risk due to inefficient environmental management, land use policies and relocation policies. Case studies from Sri Lanka. *Procedia engineering*, 212, 1326-1333.
- Dilanthi, M. G. (2013). Improving productivity with maintenance function in manufacturing industry of Sri Lanka: literature review. *International Journal of Education and Research*, 1(4), 1-10.
- Dixon, T., van de Wetering, J., Sexton, M., Lu, S.-L., Williams, D., Duman, D. U., & Chen, X. (2017). Smart cities, big data and the built environment: What's required?. Royal Institution of Chartered Surveyors.

- Draugalis, J. R., Coons, S. J., & Plaza, C. M. (2008). Best practices for survey research reports: a synopsis for authors and reviewers. *American journal of pharmaceutical education*, 72(1). doi:10.5688/aj720111
- Du Toit, J. L., & Mouton, J. (2013). A typology of designs for social research in the built environment. *International Journal of Social Research Methodology*, 16(2), 125-139.

Easterby-Smith, M., Thorpe, R., & Jackson, P. R. (2012). *Management research*. Sage.

- Eger, J. M. (2009). Smart growth, smart cities, and the crisis at the pump a worldwide phenomenon. *I-WAYS-The Journal of E-Government Policy and Regulation*, 32(1), 47-53.
- Elgazzar, R. F., & El-Gazzar, R. F. (2017, April). Smart cities, sustainable cities, or both : A critical review and synthesis of success and failure factors. In *Proceedings of the 6th International Conference on Smart Cities and Green ICT Systems*, Porto, Portugal (pp. 22-24).
- Errichiello, L., & Marasco, A. (2014). Open service innovation in smart cities: A framework for exploring innovation networks in the development of new city services. *Advanced Engineering Forum* (pp. 115-124)). Trans Tech Publications Ltd.
- Fellows, R. F., & Liu, A. M. (2015). Research methods for construction. John Wiley & Sons.
- Fothergill, A. (2000). Knowledge transfer between researchers and practitioners. *Natural Hazards Review*, 1(2), 91-98.
- Galati, S. R. (2018). Funding a smart city: From concept to actuality. *Smart Cities*, 17-39.

- Gao, J. (2015). Performance measurement and management in the public sector: Some lessons from research evidence. *Public Administration and Development*, 35(2), 86-96. doi:10.1002/pad.1704
- Garau, C., Masala, F. and Pinna, F., (2015, June). Benchmarking smart urban mobility: A study on Italian cities. In International Conference on Computational Science and Its Applications (pp. 612-623). Springer, Cham
- Gascó-Hernandez, M. (2018). Building a smart city: lessons from Barcelona. *Communications of the ACM*, 61(4), 50-57.
- Giffinger, R., Fertner, C., Kramar, H., Kalasek, R., Pichler-Milanović, N., & Meijers, E. (2007). Smart cities – Ranking of European medium-sized cities. Retrieved from http://www.smart-cities.eu/download/smart\_cities\_final\_report.pdf
- Gil-Garcia, J. R., Pardo, T. A., & Nam, T. (2015). What makes a city smart? Identifying core components and proposing an integrative and comprehensive conceptualization. *Information Polity*, 20(1), 61-87.
- Goh, S. C. (2012). Making performance measurement systems more effective in public sector organizations. *Measuring Business Excellence*, 16(1), 31-42. doi:10.1108/13683041211204653
- Gomez, C., & Paradells, J. (2015). Urban automation networks: Current and emerging solutions for sensed data collection and actuation in smart cities. *Sensors*, 15(9), 22874-22898.
- Gomm, R., Hammersley, M., & Foster, P. (2000). Case study and generalization. In *Case study method*, (pp. 98-115). Retrieved from https://www.researchgate.net/profile/Roger\_Gomm/publication/42800720\_C ase\_study\_and\_generalisation/links/5a67068fa6fdcc72a589c4a5/Case-studyand-generalisation.pdf
- Goodspeed, R. (2014). Smart cities: moving beyond urban cybernetics to tackle wicked problems. *Cambridge Journal of Regions, Economy and Society*, 8(1), 79-92. doi:10.1093/cjres/rsu013

- Grünbaum, N. N. (2007). Identification of ambiguity in the case study research typology: what is a unit of analysis? *Qualitative Market Research: an international journal*.
- Gunarathna, C., Jing-Yang, R., & Fernando, N. G. (2018). Conflicts and management styles in the Sri Lankan commercial building sector. Manchester : University of Salford. Retrieved from http://dx.doi.org/10.1108/ECAM10-20160233
- Gunasekaran, A., & Kobu, B. (2007). Performance measures and metrics in logistics and supply chain management: a review of recent literature (1995–2004) for research and applications. *International Journal of Production Research*, 45(12), 2819–2840.

Gustafsson, J. (2017). Single case studies vs. multiple case studies: A comparative study.

Halachmi, A. (2002). Performance measurement and government productivity. *Work study*.

- Halachmi, A. (2005). Performance measurement is only one way of managing performance. *International journal of productivity and performance management*.
- Halachmi, A., & Greiling, D. (2011). Imagined promises versus real challenges to public performance management. International Journal of Productivity and Performance Management.
- Halachmi, A., & Holzer, M. (2010). Citizen participation and performance measurement: Operationalizing democracy through better accountability. *Public Administration Quarterly*, 378-399.
- Hamilton, S., & Zhu, X. (2017). Funding and financing smart cities. *The Journal of Government Financial Management*, 66(1), 26-33.

- Hamza, K. (2015). Smart city implementation framework for developing countries: The case of Egypt. In J. R. Gil-Garcia, T. A. Pardo, & T. Nam (Ed.). Smarter as the New Urban Agenda: A comprehensive view of the 21st century city, (pp. 171–187). Switzerland: Springer. doi:10.1007/978-3-319-17620-8\_9
- Haponava, T., & AlJibouri, S. (2010). Influence of process performance during the construction stage on achieving end-project goals. *Construction Management* and Economics, 28(8), 853-869. doi:10.1080/01446193.2010.487535
- Harbour, J. L. (2017). The basics of performance measurement. Productivity Press.
- Harms , J. (2016). Critical success factors for a smart city strategy. 25th twente student conference on IT. Netherlands.
- Harrison, K. (2017). Who is the assumed user in the smart city?. *Designing, Developing, and Facilitating Smart Cities*, (pp. 17-32). Springer, Cham.
- Hartley, J. (2005). Innovation in governance and public services. Past and Public Money & Management, 25(1), pp. 27-34.
- Harvey, J., & Technical Information Service. (2008). Performance Measurement Topic Gateway Series No. 9. CIMA.
- Heaton, J., & Parlikad, A. K. (2019). A conceptual framework for the alignment of infrastructure assets to citizen requirements within a Smart Cities framework. *Cities*, 90, 32-41.
- Heini, O. (2007). Performance Measurements: Designing a Generic Measure and Performance Indicator Model. Geneva: Department of Information Systems of the University of Geneva.
- Hervani, A. A., Helms, M. M., & Sarkis, J. (2005). Performance measurement for green supply chain management. *Benchmarking: An International Journal*, 12(4), 330-353.

- Ho, T. A., & Ni, A. Y. (2005). Have Cities Shifted to Outcome-Oriented Performance Reporting?-A Content Analysis of City Budgets. *Public Budgeting Finance*, 25(2), 61–83. doi:10.1111/j.0275-1100.2005.00361
- Hollands, R. G. (2008). Will the real smart city please stand up? Intelligent, progressive or entrepreneurial?. *City*, *12*(3), 303-320.
- Holloway, A., & Wajzer, C. (2008, October). Improving city performance through benchmarking. In International Cities Town Centres & Communities Society Conference, Sydney, October.
- Huovila, A., Airaksinen, M., Pinto-Seppä, I., Piira, K., Bosch, P., Penttinen, T., & Kontinakis, N. (2017). CITYkeys smart city performance measurement system. *International Journal for Housing Science and Its Applications*, 41(2), 113-125.
- Ibrahim, M. (2010). Post-Disaster Housing reconstruction in a conflict affected district, Batticaloa, *Sri Lanka: Reflecting on the Climate Smart Disaster Risk Management Approach*.
- Igwenagu, C. (2016). Fundamentals of research methodology and data collection. LAP LAMBERT Academic Publishing.
- Ismagilova, E., Hughes, L., Dwivedi, Y.K. & Raman, K.R. (2019). Smart cities: Advances in research – An information systems perspective. *International Journal of Information Management*, 47, pp. 88-100.
- Ittner, C. D. (2015). Performance Measurement Implementation Issues. In C. L. Cooper (Ed.). *Wiley Encyclopedia of Management*, (pp. 1-4). John Wiley & Sons, Ltd. Retrieved from https://onlinelibrary.wiley.com/doi/abs/10.1002/9781118785317.weom01008 9
- Ittner, C. D., & Larcker, D. F. (2003). Coming up short on nonfinancial performance measurement. *Harvard business review*, *81*(11), 88-95.

- Johansson, E., & Emmanuel, R. (2006). The influence of urban design on outdoor thermal comfort in the hot, humid city of Colombo, Sri Lanka. *International journal of biometeorology*, 51(2), 119-133.
- Johnsen, A. G. (1999). Implementation mode and local government performance measurement: A Norwegian experience. *Financial Accountability & Management*, 15(1), 41-66.
- Jonker, J., & Pennink, B. (2010). The essence of research methodology : A concise guide for master and PhD students in management science. Springer. doi:10.1007/978-3-540-71659-4
- Kagioglou, M, Cooper, R, Aouad G, Hinks, J, Sexton, M and Sheath, D (1998) A Generic Guide to the Design and Construction Process Protocol, University of Salford.
- Keathley, H., & Van Aken, E. (2013). Systematic literature review on the factors that affect performance measurement system implementation. In *IIE Annual Conference. Proceedings* (p. 837). Institute of Industrial and Systems Engineers (IISE).
- Kennerley , M., & Neely, A. (2002). A framework of the factors affecting the evolution of performance measurement systems. *International Journal Of Operations & Production Management*, 22(11), 1222-1245.
- Keong Choong, K. (2013). Understanding the features of performance measurement system: A literature review. *Measuring Business Excellence*, *17*(4), 102-121.
- Khatoun, R., & Zeadally, S. (2016). Smart cities: concepts, architectures, research opportunities. *Communications of the ACM*, *59*(8), 46-57.
- Kivunja, C., & Kuyini, A. B. (2017). Understanding and Applying Research Paradigms in Educational Contexts. *International Journal of Higher Education*, 6(5), 26-41. doi:10.5430/ijhe.v6n5p26

- Kolingerová, H. G. (2016). Lack of information and difficulty of implementation as the obstacles to the adoption of performance measurement systems at Czech organizations. *Central European Journal of Management*, 3(2), 1-20. Retrieved from https://doi.org/10.5817/CEJM2016-2-1 3
- Komninos, N. (2008). Intelligent cities and globalisation of innovation networks. New York: Taylor & Francis.
- Komninos, N., Bratsas, C., Kakderi, C., & Tsarchopoulos, P. (2019). Smart city ontologies: Improving the effectiveness of smart city applications. *Journal of Smart Cities*, 1(1), 31-46.
- Kono, N., Suwa, A., & Ahmad, S. (2016). Smart cities in Japan and their application in developing countries. *Low Carbon Urban Infrastructure Investment in Asian Cities*, (pp. 95-122). London: Palgrave Macmillan.
- Korkmaz, S., Riley , D., & Horman, M. (2011). Assessing project delivery for sustainable, high-performance buildings through mixed methods. *Architectural Engineering and Design Management*, 7(4), 266-274. Retrieved from https://doi.org/10.1080/17452007.2011.618675
- Kostakis, V., Bauwens, M., & Niaros, V. (2015). Urban Reconfiguration after the emergence of peer-to-peer infrastructure: Four future scenarios with an impact on smart cities. *Smart Cities as Democratic Ecologies*, pp. 116-124.
- Kothari, C. R. (2004). Research Methodology Methods and Techniques (2nd revised ed.). New Delhi: New Age International (P) Ltd., Publishers. Retrieved from http://dspace.utamu.ac.ug:8080/xmlui/bitstream/handle/123456789/181/Rese arch%20Methodology%20-%20Methods%20and%20Techniques%202004.pdf?sequence=1
- Kourtit, K., Nijkamp, P., & Steenbruggen, J. (2017). The significance of digital data systems for smart city policy. *Socio-Economic Planning Sciences*, 58, 13-21.

- Kulatunga, U. (2008). Influence of Performance Measurement Towards Construction Research and Development. UK: Research Institute for the Built and Human Environment, School of the Built Environment, University of Salford.
- Kulatunga, K. J., Amaratunga, R. D., & Haigh, R. P. (2007). Researching construction client and innovation: methodological perspective, (pp. 479-488).
- Kulatunga, U., Liyanage, C., & Amaratunga, D. (2010). Performance measurement and management in facilities management. *Facilities*.
- Kumar, R. (2019). *Research methodology: A step-by-step guide for beginners*. Sage Publications Limited.
- Laitinen, E. K. (2002). A dynamic performance measurement system: evidence from small Finnish technology companies. *Scandinavian Journal of Management*, 18(1), 65-99.
- Landy, F., Zedeck, S. & Cleveland, J. (2017) . *Performance measurement and theory*. Oxon: Routledge.
- Larsson, J., & Kinnunen, J. (2008). Performance measurement in nonprofits: Much to be gained or a waste of resources?. Retrieved from https://www.divaportal.org/smash/get/diva2:141869/FULLTEXT01.pdf
- Lau, C. T. (2011). Nonfinancial and financial performance measures: How do they affect employee role clarity and performance?. *Advances in Accounting*, 27(2), 286-293.
- Lee, C. L., & Lai, S. Q. (2007). Performance measurement systems for knowledge management in high technology industries: a balanced scorecard framework. *International Journal of Technology Management*, 39(1/2), 158. doi:, 39(1/2), 754-771. doi:10.1504/ijtm.2007.013444

- Lee, J. H., Hancock, M. G. & Hu, M. C. (2014). Towards an effective framework for building smart cities: Lessons from Seoul and San Francisco. *Technological Forecasting & Social Change*, 89, pp. 80-99.
- Lee, S. H., Han, J. H., Leem, Y. T. & Yigitcanlar, T. (2008). Towards ubiquitous city: Concept, planning, and experiences in the Republic of Korea. *Knowledge-Based Urban Development: Planning and Applications in the Information Era*, pp. 148-169.
- Leon, M., Laing, R., Malins, J., & Salman, H. (2014). Development and testing of a design protocol for computer mediated multidisciplinary collaboration during the concept stages with application to the built environment. *Procedia Environmental Sciences*, 22, 108 – 119. doi:10.1016/j.proenv.2014.11.011
- LeRoux, K., & Wright, S. N. (2010). Does performance measurement improve strategic decision making? Findings from a national survey of nonprofit social service agencies. *Nonprofit and Voluntary Sector Quarterly*, 39(4), 571-587.
- Letaifa, B. (2015). How to strategize smart cities: Revealing the SMART model. *Journal of Business Research*, 68(7), 1414–1419. doi:10.1016/j.jbusres.2015.01.024
- Li, P., & Tang, G. (2009). Performance measurement design within its organisational context—Evidence from China. *Management Accounting Research*, 20(3), 193-207.
- Li, S., Easterby-Smith, M., Lyles, M. A., & Clark, T. (2016). Tapping the power of local knowledge: A local-global interactive perspective. *Journal of World Business*, 51(4), 641-653.
- Lombardi, P., Giordano, S., Farouh, H., & Yousef, W. (2012). Modelling the smart city performance. *Innovation: The European Journal of Social Science Research*, 25(2), 137-149. doi:10.1080/13511610.2012.660325

- Lune, H., & Berg, B. L. (2016). *Qualitative research methods for the social sciences*. Pearson Higher Ed.
- Maccani, G., Donnellan, B., & Helfert, M. (2013). A Comprehensive Framework for Smart Cities. The 2nd International Conference on Smart Grids and Green IT Systems (SMARTGREENS-2013), (pp. 53-63). Science and Technology Publications, Lda. doi:10.5220/0004374400530063
- Mackenzie, N., & Knipe, S. (2006). Research dilemmas: paradigms, methods and methodology. Issues In Educational Research, 16, 1-15.
- Macpherson, M. (2001). Performance measurement in not-for-profit and publicsector organisations. *Measuring business excellence*.
- Mafuwane, B. M. (2011). *The contribution of instructional leadership on learner performance* (PhD thesis). University of Pretoria, South Africa. Retrieved from https://repository.up.ac.za/bitstream/handle/2263/24016/04chapter4.pdf?sequ ence=5
- Mahizhnan, A. (1999). Smart cities: the Singapore case. *Cities*, 16(1), 13-18.
- Malmadana Kapuge, A., & Smith, M. (2007). Management practices and performance reporting in the Sri Lankan apparel sector. *Managerial Auditing Journal*, 22(3), 303-318.
- Marcus, L., & Koch, D. (2016). Cities as implements or facilities The need for a spatial morphology in smart city systems. *Environment and Planning B: Urban Analytics and City Science*, 1-22. doi:10.1177/0265813516685565
- Markusen, J. R., & Trofimenko, N. (2009). Teaching locals new tricks: Foreign experts as a channel of knowledge transfers. *Journal of Development Economics*, 88(1), 120-131.
- Marrone, M., & Hammerle, M. (2018). Smart cities: A review and analysis of stakeholders' literature. Business & Information Systems Engineering, 60(3), 197-213.

- Martinez, V., & Kennerley, M. (2005). What is the value of using performance management systems. *Perspectives on performance*, 4(2), 16-18.
- Martínez-Ballesté, A., Pérez-Martínez, P. A., & Solanas, A. (2013). The pursuit of citizens' privacy: a privacy-aware smart city is possible. *IEEE Communications Magazine*, 51(6), 136-141. Retrieved from https://crisesdeim.urv.cat/web/docs/publications/journals/794.pdf
- Mausolff, C. (2004). Learning from feedback in performance measurement systems. *Public Performance & Management Review*, 28(1), 9-29.
- Mavrič, J., & Bobek, V. (2015). Measuring Urban Development and City Performance. In V. Bobek, Perspectives on Business and Management, (pp. 71-99). IntechOpen.
- Meijer, A., & Bolívar, M. P. R. (2016). Governing the smart city: a review of the literature on smart urban governance. *international review of administrative sciences*, 82(2), 392-408.
- Melitski, J., & Manoharan, A. (2014). Performance measurement, accountability, and transparency of budgets and financial reports. *Public Administration Quarterly*, 38-70.
- Melnikovas, A. (2018). Towards an Explicit Research Methodology: Adapting Research Onion Model for Futures Studies. *Journal of Futures Studies*, 23(2), 29–44. doi:10.6531/JFS.201812\_23(2).0003
- Mendibil, K., & MacBryde, J. (2005). Designing effective team-based performance measurement systems: an integrated approach. *Production Planning & Control, 16*(2), 208-225.
- Menouar, H., Guvenc, I., Akkaya, K., Uluagac, A. S., Kadri, A., & Tuncer, A. (2017). UAV-enabled intelligent transportation systems for the smart city: Applications and challenges. *IEEE Communications Magazine*, 55(3), 22-28.

- Merli, M. Z., & Bonollo, E. (2014). Performance measurement in the smart cities. In Smart City, (pp. 139-155). Cham: Springer.
- Monzon, A., (2015). Smart cities concept and challenges: Bases for the assessment of smart city projects. s.l., IEEE, pp. 1-11.
- Mora, L., Bolici, R., & Deakin, M. (2017). The First Two Decades of Smart-City Research: A Bibliometric Analysis. *Journal of Urban Technology*, 24(1), 3-27. doi:10.1080/10630732.2017.1285123
- Moynihan, D. P., & Pandey, S. K. (2010). The Big Question for Performance Management: Why Do Managers Use Performance Information?. *Journal of Public Administration Research and Theory*, 20(4), 849–866. doi:10.1093/jopart/muq004
- Munir, M. S., Abedin, S. F., Alam, M. G., Tran, N. H., & Hong, C. S. (2018). Intelligent service fulfillment for software defined networks in smart city. *International Conference on Information Networking (ICOIN)*, 516-521.
- Nam, T., & Pardo, T. A. (2011, June). Conceptualizing smart city with dimensions of technology, people, and institutions. In *Proceedings of the 12th annual international digital government research conference: digital government innovation in challenging times*, (pp. 282-291).
- Neely, A. (2005). The evolution of performance measurement research. *International Journal of Operations & Production Management*, 25 (12), 1264-1277.
- Neely, A., Gregory, M., & Platts, K. (2005). Performance measurement system design: A literature review and system design: A literature review and research agenda. *International Journal of Operations & Production Management*, 25(12), 1228-1263. doi:10.1108/01443570510633639
- Neirotti, P., De Marco, A., Cagliano, A., Mangano, G., & Scorrano, F. (2014). Current trends in Smart City initiatives: Some stylised facts. *Cities*, *38*, 25-36.

- Newcomer, K. E., Hatry, H. P., & Wholey, J. S. (2015). *Handbook of practical program evaluation*. USA: John Wiley & Sons.
- Nimalathasan, B. (2009). Determinants of key performance indicators (KPIs) of private sector banks in Sri Lanka: An application of exploratory factor analysis. *The USV Annals of Economics and Public Administration*, 9(2), 9-17.
- Nudurupati, S. S., Bititci, U. S., Kumar, V., & Chan, F. T. (2011). State of the art literature review on performance measurement. *Computers & Industrial Engineering*, 60(2), 279-290. doi:10.1016/j.cie.2010.11.010
- Ojo, A., Dzhusupova, Z., & Curry, E. (2015). Exploring the Nature of the Smart Cities Research Landscape. *Public Administration And Information Technology*, 23-47. doi:10.1007/978-3-319-17620-8\_2
- Omotayo, T., & Kulatunga, U. (2015). The research methodology for the development of a kaizen costing framework suitable for indigenous construction firms in Lagos, Nigeria. (L. Scott, & C. Udeaja, Eds.)
- Orlowski, A., & Romanowska, P. (2019). Smart Cities Concept: Smart Mobility Indicator. *Cybernetics and Systems*, 50(2), 118-131.
- Parker, C. (2000). Performance measurement. Work study.
- Paskaleva, K. A. (2011). The smart city: A nexus for open innovation?. *Intelligent Buildings International*, 3(3), 153-171.
- Pekkola, S., & Ukko, J. (2016). Designing a performance measurement system for collaborative network. *International Journal of Operations & Production Management*, 36(11), 1410-1434.
- Perera, S. P., & Perera, H. S. (2013). Developing a performance measurement system for apparel sector lean manufacturing organizations in Sri Lanka. *Vision*, 17(4), 293-301.

- Peris-Ortiz, M., Bennett, D. R., & Yábar, D. P. (2017). Sustainable Smart Cities: Creating Spaces for Technological, Social and Business Development . Switzerland: Cham: Springer International Publishing. doi:10.1007/978-3-319-40895-8
- Perrone, F. M. (2014). *Financing instruments for smart city projects*. Italy: Libera Università Internazionale degli Studi Sociali.
- Pollitt, C. (2013). The logics of performance management. *Evaluation*, *19*(4), 346-363.
- Pritchard, R., & Kelly, S. (2017). Realising operational energy performance in nondomestic buildings: lessons learnt from initiatives applied in Cambridge. *Sustainability*, 9(1345), 1-21. doi:10.3390/su9081345
- Psyllidis, A., Bozzon, A., Bocconi, S., & Bolivar, C. T. (2015, July). A platform for urban analytics and semantic data integration in city planning. *In International conference on computer-aided architectural design futures*, (pp. 21-36). Springer, Berlin, Heidelberg.
- Putu, S. N., Jan van Helden, G., & Tillema, S. (2007). Public sector performance measurement in developing countries: A literature review and research agenda. *Journal of Accounting & Organizational Change*, 3(3), 192-208.
- Qian, Y., Wu, D., Bao, W. & Lorenz, P. (2019). The Internet of Things for Smart Cities: Technologies and Applications (Guest editorial). *IEEE Network*, 33(2), pp. 4-5.
- Rajasekar, S., Philominaathan , P., & Chinnathambi, V. (2013). Research methodology. Retrieved from http://arxiv.org/pdf/physics/0601009.pdf
- Remenyi, D., Williams, B., Money, A., & Swartz, E. (1998). Doing research in business and management: an introduction to process and method. Sage.

- Richter, C., Kraus, S., & Syrjä, P. (2015). The Smart City as an opportunity for entrepreneurship. *International Journal of Entrepreneurial Venturing*, 7(3), 211-226.
- Ryan, G. W., & Bernard, H. R. (2003). Techniques to identify themes. *Field methods*, 15(1), 85-109.
- Samar, R. (2017). Research Design and Methods: A Systematic Review of Research Paradigms, Sampling Issues and Instruments Development. *International Journal of Economics & Management Sciences*, 6(2), 1-5. doi:10.4172/2162-6359.1000403
- Samih, H. (2019). Smart cities and internet of things. *Journal of Information Technology Case and Application Research*, 21(1), 3-12.
- Sammut-Bonnici, T., & McGee, J. (2015). Case study. *Wiley Encyclopedia of Management*, 1-2. Retrieved from https://www.researchgate.net/profile/Tanya\_Sammut-Bonnici/publication/257847801\_Case\_Study/links/59f6fd45a6fdcc075ec61e6 1/Case-Study.pdf
- Sanger, M. B. (2008). From measurement to management: Breaking through the barriers to state and local performance. *Public Administration Review*, 70-85. Retrieved from http://citeseerx.ist.psu.edu/viewdoc/download?doi=10.1.1.473.2236&rep=rep 1&type=pdf
- Santos, D. (2018). Smart Cities and Entrepreneurship: A New Challenge for Universities. The Proceedings of the Third International Conference on Smart City Applications, (pp. 118–131). Springer, Cham. doi:10.1007/978-3-030-11196-0\_12
- Saunders, M., Lewis, P., & Thornhill, A. (2019). *Research methods for business students*. United Kingdom: Pearson Education Limited.

- Schaffers, H., Komninos, N., & Pallot, M. (2012). Smart cities as innovation ecosystems sustained by the future internet. *Technical report*. Retrieved from https://hal.inria.fr/hal-00769635/document
- Shafritz, J. M., Borick, C., Russell, E. W., & Hyde, A. C. (2016). *Introducing public administration*. Routledge.
- Sharma, S. K. & Meyer, K. E. (2019). The Role of Smart Cities or Regional Hubs. *Industrializing Innovation-the Next Revolution*, pp. 163–168.
- Shen, L., Huang, Z., Wong, S. W., Liao, S., & Yingli, L. (2018). A holistic evaluation of smart city performance in the context of China. *Journal of Cleaner Production*. doi:10.1016/j.jclepro.2018.07.281
- Singh, A., & Masuku, M. (2014). Sampling techniques and determination of sample size in applied statistics research: an overview. IjecmCoUk 2014; II (11): 1– 22.
- Singh, S., Mathur, A., Das, S., Sinha, P., & Singh, V. (2017). Development of smart public transport system by converting the existing conventional vehicles to ev's in Indian smart cities (No. 2017-01-2011). SAE Technical Paper.
- Sivagnanasothy, V. (2010). Monitoring and evaluation system in Sri Lanka: Experiences, challenges and the way forward. *Fifth conference of The Latin America and the Caribbean Monitoring and Evaluation Network*, (pp. 1-16). Mimeo.
- Soltes, V., & Gavurova, B. (2015). Modification of performance measurement system in the intentions of globalization trends. *Polish Journal of Management Studies*, 11.
- Stratigea, A. (2012). The concept of 'smart cities'- Towards community development?. Netcom, Réseaux, communication et territoires, 26(3/4), 375-388.

- Su, K., Li, J., & Fu, H. (2011). Smart city and the applications. International Conference on Electronics, Communications and Control (ICECC), (pp. 1028-1031). IEEE.
- Taamallah, A., Khemaja, M., & Faiz, S. (2017). Strategy ontology construction and learning: insights from smart city strategies. *International Journal of Knowledge-Based Development*, 8(3), 206-228.
- Tangen, S. (2004). Performance measurement: From philosophy to practice. International journal of productivity and performance management, 53(8), 726-737.
- Taticchi, P., Cocca, P., & Alberti, M. (2010). A framework to assess performance measurement systems in SMEs. *International Journal of Productivity and Performance Management*, 59(2), 186-200.
- Thanh, N. C., & Thanh, T. T. (2015). The Interconnection Between Interpretivist. American Journal of Educational Science Paradigm and Qualitative Methods in Education, 1(2), 24-27.
- The Island. (2019, February 27). Port City Colombo receives ISO 9001:2015 certification. Retrieved from Sunday Island e-paper : http://www.island.lk/index.php?page\_cat=article-details&page=articledetails&code\_title=200108
- Thuzar, M. (2011). Urbanization in Southeast Asia: developing smart cities for the future?. *Regional Outlook, 96*.
- Tomar, A., & Gupta, N. (2019, April). Redefining Smart Cities–Tradition versus Branding–a Tale of Varanasi. In REAL CORP 2019–IS THIS THE REAL WORLD? Perfect Smart Cities vs. Real Emotional Cities. Proceedings of 24th International Conference on Urban Planning, Regional Development and Information Society, (pp. 941-948). CORP–Compentence Center of Urban and Regional Planning.

- Tung, A., Baird, K., & Schoch, H. P. (2011). Factors influencing the effectiveness of performance measurement systems. *International Journal of Operations & Production Management*, 31(12), 1287-1310.
- U. S. Department of Health and Human Services. (2011). Performance management and measurement. U. S. Department of Health and Human Services and Health Resources and Services Administration.
- UNESCO Institute of Statistics. (2019). *ISCED mappings*. Retrieved from http://uis.unesco.org/en/isced-mappings#slideoutmenu
- United Nations. (2018). *The world's cities in 2016 Data booklet*. Department of Economic and social Affairs: United Nations.
- Vachnadze, R. (2016). Prioritization of performance measures using analytic hierarchy process. *International Journal of the Analytic Hierarchy Process*, 8(3), 490-501.
- Vanolo, A. (2014). Smartmentality: The smart city as disciplinary strategy. Urban studies, 51(5), 883-898.
- Vázquez, A. N., & Vicente, M. R. (2019). Exploring the determinants of eparticipation in smart cities. *E-Participation in Smart Cities: Technologies* and Models of Governance for Citizen Engagement, (pp. 157-178). Springer, Cham.
- Vu, K., & Hartley, K. (2018). Promoting smart cities in developing countries: Policy insights from Vietnam. *Telecommunications Policy*, 42(10), 845-859.
- Wagh, C. H. (2014). The Environmental Impact Assessment by Using the Battelle Method. *International Journal of Science and Research*, 3(7), 82-86. Retrieved from ijsr.net/archive/v3i7/MDIwMTQ5OTk=.pdf
- Walliman, N. (2011). Research methods: The basics. Oxon: Routledge.
- Walliman, N. (2017). Research methods: The basics (2nd ed.). London: Routledge.

- Wang, H., Law, K. S., & Chen, Z. X. (2008). Leader-member exchange, employee performance, and work outcomes: An empirical study in the Chinese context. *The International Journal of Human Resource Management*, 19, 1809-1824.
- Willis, J. W. (2007). Foundations of qualitative research: interpretive and critical approaches. London: Sage. London: Sage.
- Xie, J., Tang, H., Huang, T., Yu, F. R., Xie, R., Liu, J., & Liu, Y. (2019). A survey of blockchain technology applied to smart cities: Research issues and challenges. *IEEE Communications Surveys & Tutorials*, 21(3), 2794-2830.
- Yadav, P. & Patel, S., (2015). Sustainable city, livable city, global city or smart city: What value addition should smart city bring to these paradigms in context of global south?. In 13th International congress of Asian planning schools association (APSA 2015), Johor Bahru, Malaysia.
- Yigitcanlar, T. (2014). Position paper: Benchmarking the performance of global and emerging knowledge cities. *Expert Systems with Applications*, 41(12), 5549-5559.
- Yigitcanlar, T., Kamruzzaman, M., Buys, L., Ioppolo, G., Sabatini-Marques, J., da Costa, E. M., & Yun, J. J. (2018). Understanding 'smart cities': Intertwining development drivers with desired outcomes in a multidimensional framework. *Cities*, 81, 145-160.
- Yin, R. K. (2009). *Case study research: Design and methods* (4th ed.). California: SAGE Plublications Inc.
- Yin, R. K. (2014). *Case study research : Design and methods* (5th ed.). California: SAGE Publications, Inc.
- Zamawe, F. C. (2015). The implication of using NVivo software in qualitative data analysis: Evidence-based reflections. *Malawi Medical Journal*, 27(1), 13-15.

- Zhang, K., Ni, J., Yang, K., Liang, X., Ren, J., & Shen, X. S. (2017). Security and privacy in smart city applications: Challenges and solutions. *IEEE Communications Magazine*, 55(1), 122-129.
- Zygiaris, S. (2013). Smart city reference model: Assisting planners to conceptualize the building of smart city innovation ecosystems. *Journal of the Knowledge Economy*, *4*(2), 217–231.

# ANNEXURES

# **APPENDIX A -PRELIMINARY INTRVIEW GUIDELINE**

.....

Dear Sir/Madam,

## Research Dissertation – Interview Guideline (M.Sc. (by Research)

I am a postgraduate student of University of Moratuwa, reading for Master of Science (by Research). I am conducting a research titled "A Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities in Sri Lanka". This research is conducted under the supervision of Dr. Udayangani Kulatunga and Dr Dilum Bandara, Senior Lecturers at the Department of Building Economics and Department of Computer Science and Engineering respectively.

I have selected the proposed Smart City project in Colombo Port City as the case study and I am conducting interviews with key participants engaged in this project. The objectives of this study and the interview guideline are attached herewith.

I have identified yourself as a potential participant who could provide me valuable information to this research. Therefore, I would like to interview you for **approximately 60 minutes** in this regard. The medium of collecting data will be **note taking and audio recording (with the permission of the interviewee)** in order to collect data more accurately.

I strongly believe that you would support to my research by providing your views related to my research topic. The information collected through this interview will be kept strictly confidential and should be used only for the purpose of the dissertation. Any of your personnel information will not be disclosed within the research.

Thank you. Aravindi Samarakkody Postgraduate Student Department of Building Economics University of Moratuwa. Tel: 077-5557666 Email: aravindilavanya5@gmail.com

### EXPERT INTERVIEW GUIDELINE FOR PRELIMINARY INTRVIEWS

## SECTION I - GENERAL INTRODUCTION TO THE RESEARCH

#### **Research Title**

"Performance Measurement for the Development of Emerging Smart Cities: The Case of Sri Lanka"

### **Research Aim**

The aim of this research is to enhance the emerging Smart City development projects in Sri Lanka through an appropriate and holistic Smart City Performance Measurement Systems.

#### **Research Objectives**

Following objectives will be achieved to reach the above research aim.

- 1. To investigate the characteristics of Smart Cities globally and with particular reference to Sri Lanka.
- 2. To investigate the importance of Performance Measurement in Smart City development.
- 3. To synthesise different Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities.
- 4. To identify the barriers to implement a Performance Measurement System to Sri Lanka and solutions to overcome the barriers.
- 5. To develop a Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities in Sri Lanka.

## SECTION II - BACKGROUND INFORMATION OF THE INTERVIEWEE

1. Profession:

.....

2. Designation:

.....

3. How long is your industry experience?

# **SECTION III – PROJECT DETAILS**

Please mention the basic project details you are aware which can be needful for this research project

# SECTION IV – ENABLERS AND BARRIERS TO IMPLEMENT A PERFORMANCE MEASUREMENT SYSTEM TO SMCPC

Please mention the reasons to proceed this research project (enablers to implement a Performance Measurement System to the SMCPC) and the potential barriers to implement a Performance Measurement System to the SMCPC

ENABLERS	BARRIERS

Following list includes some of the barriers identified through the literature review;

Implementation issues - implementation procedure is complicated and lengthy

Cost Vs Benefits - higher cost of implementation and introduction of Performance Measurement Systems with compared to its potential benefits

"Beauty is in the eye of the beholder" - complicated and diversified interests of different stakeholders, make the performance appraisal stage complicated and therefore detain the Performance Measurement implementation by requiring to make the critical decision with regards to prioritizing the stakeholders.

Technology aspects - developing countries have their limitations and unavailability of technologies which cause delays in information and automation issues in the process of performance measurement

Difficulties in obtaining information - difficulties to access different sources involves extra work and therefore either inaccuracies occur or the Performance Measurement System becomes completely useless without required information timely

Privacy issues - until the reliable application of new technologies, obtaining data without putting citizen's privacy endanger remains a problem

Workload - Performance Measurement usually becomes an additional effort which requires a proper training in respect to data collection, meaningful data management and reporting

Human involvement - subjectivity and human errors

Lack of integration – problems in linking organizational objectives to performance objectives

Internal resistance - when creating the conduct transparent in an organization, the members feel uncomfortable and in danger which then result in an internal resistance

# **APPENDIX B – CASE STUDY INTRVIEW GUIDELINE**

# **COVERING LETTER FOR INTERVIEW GUIDELINE**

.....

Dear Sir/Madam,

## Research Dissertation – Interview Guideline (M.Sc. (by Research)

I am a postgraduate student of University of Moratuwa, reading for Master of Science (by Research). I am conducting a research titled "A Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities in Sri Lanka". This research is conducted under the supervision of Dr. Udayangani Kulatunga and Dr Dilum Bandara, Senior Lecturers at the Department of Building Economics and Department of Computer Science and Engineering respectively.

I have selected the proposed Smart City project in Colombo Port City as the case study and I am conducting interviews with key participants engaged in this project. The objectives of this study and the interview guideline are attached herewith.

I have identified yourself as a potential participant who could provide me valuable information to this research. Therefore, I would like to interview you for **approximately 90 minutes** in this regard. The medium of collecting data will be **note taking and audio recording (with the permission of the interviewee)** in order to collect data more accurately.

I strongly believe that you would support to my research by providing your views related to my research topic. The information collected through this interview will be kept strictly confidential and should be used only for the purpose of the dissertation. Any of your personnel information will not be disclosed within the research.

Thank you. Aravindi Samarakkody Postgraduate Student Department of Building Economics University of Moratuwa. Tel: 077-5557666 Email: aravindilavanya5@gmail.com

### EXPERT INTERVIEW GUIDELINE FOR ROUND ONE

### SECTION I - GENERAL INTRODUCTION TO THE RESEARCH

#### **Research Title**

"Performance Measurement for the Development of Emerging Smart Cities: The Case of Sri Lanka"

## **Research Aim**

The aim of this research is to enhance the emerging Smart City development projects in Sri Lanka through an appropriate and holistic Smart City Performance Measurement Systems.

### **Research Objectives**

Following objectives will be achieved to reach the above research aim.

- 1. To investigate the characteristics of Smart Cities globally and with particular reference to Sri Lanka.
- 2. To investigate the importance of Performance Measurement in Smart City development.
- 3. To synthesise different Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities.
- 4. To identify the barriers to implement a Performance Measurement System to Sri Lanka and solutions to overcome the barriers.
- 5. To develop a Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities in Sri Lanka.

## SECTION II - BACKGROUND INFORMATION OF THE INTERVIEWEE

Profession:
 Designation:

.....

3. How long is your industry experience?

.....

# SECTION III – SUITABILITY OF THE SUMMARY PERFORMANCE MEASURES FROM LITERATURE TO SRI LANKA

(Please mark the suitability of each theme, sub theme, indicator and provide reasons for the unsuitability)

Theme	Suitability	Sub Theme	Suitability	Indicators	Suitability
		Economic		Financial benefit for the end user	
		performance		Net Present Value (NPV)	
				Internal rate of return (IRR)	
				Payback Period	
				Total cost vs. subsidies	
				Debt of municipal authority per resident	
		Innovation,		Involvement of extraordinary professionals	
		Innovative spirit,		Quality of open data	
		and Innovation		New start-ups	
2		performance		Improved interoperability	
KMO				Employment rate in:	
SMART ECONOMY				High Tech and creative industries; Renewable energy and energy efficiency systems Financial intermediation and business activities; knowledge- intensive sectors; Culture and entertainment industry; Commercial services; Transport and communication; Hotels and restaurants; All companies (total number)	
				Number of local units manufacturing High Tech &	
				ICT products	
				Patent applications per inhabitant	
				Number of incubators (per million of population)	
				Number of S&T Parks per million of population)	
				Number of Technology Transfer and Innovation	
				Centres (per million of population)	
				Exports high-tech services per cent total exports)	

	New trade marks (per million of population)
	Enterprises having internal R&D department (per
	cent of all enterprises)
	Sales of new-to-market products (per cent of
	turnover)
	Sales of new-to-firm not new o-market products
	(per cent of turnover)
	New business models for smart growth and quality of life
	New business models
	Living Labs
	Creative class
	Web of Trust
Entrepreneurship	Self-employment rate
	New businesses registered
	Percentage of projects funded by civil society
Economic image	Importance as decision-making centre (HQ etc.)
& trademarks	
Production and	GDP per employed person
Productivity	GDP per head of city population
Employment,	Increased use of local workforce
Flexibility of	Local job creation
labour market,	Unemployment rate
Jobs and Skills	Proportion in part-time employment
International	Companies with HQ in the city quoted on national
embeddedness	stock market
	Air transport of passengers
	Air transport of freight
Equity	Fuel poverty
	Costs of housing
	Median or average disposable annual household
	income
Green economy	Certified companies involved in the project
	Green public procurement
	CO2 reduction cost efficiency
	Energy intensity of the economy
	-gross inland consumption of energy divided by GDP

	Attractiveness &	Decreased travel time
	competitiveness	
	Education and	Public expenditure on R&D
	Research and	-percentage of GDP per head of city population
	Development	Public expenditure on education
		-percentage of GDP per head of city population
		Number of research grants funded by international
		projects
	Organization	Leadership
	composition,	Balanced project team
	process,	Involvement of the city administration
	leadership, and	Clear division of responsibility
	transparency	Continued monitoring and reporting
		Market orientation
	Community	Professional stakeholder involvement
	involvement in	Bottom-up or top-down initiative
	decision-making	Local community involvement in planning phase
		Local community involvement in implementation
		phase
NCE		Participatory governance
RNA		City representatives per resident
<b>OVE</b>		Political activity of inhabitants
T GC		Importance of politics for inhabitants
SMART GOVERNANCE		Share of female city representatives
NS		Participation by social media
	Multi-level	Smart City policy
	governance	Municipal involvement - Financial support
	Governance	Governance orchestration
	fragmentation	Infrastructure Alignment
		District Regeneration
	Public and social	Expenditure of the municipal per resident in PPS
	services	Share of children in day care
		Satisfaction with quality of schools
		Trading platform for public resources
	Transparent	Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy
	governance	Satisfaction with fight against corruption

	Planning and	Smart Urban Planning
	Regulation	Smart Identity Branding
	Attractivity of	Sunshine hours
	natural conditions	Green space share
	Eco-sustainability	Increase in green and blue space
		Increased ecosystem quality and biodiversity
		Percentage of new buildings and renovation which
		were assessed in terms of sustainability
	Environmental	Individual efforts on protecting nature
	protection	Opinion on nature protection
		An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2
		emission reduction strategy
		Carbon dioxide emission reduction
		Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emissions
		An assessment of the comprehensiveness of
		policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and
ENT		monitor environmental performance
IWN	Sustainable	Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)
IRO	resource	The total percentage of the working population
EN	management	traveling to work on public transport, by bicycle
SMART ENVIRONMENT		and by foot
SM		An assessment of the extensiveness of efforts to
		increase the use of cleaner transport
		Percentage of citizens engaged in environmental
		and sustainability-oriented activity
		The percentage of total energy derived from
		renewable sources, as a share of the city's total
		energy consumption, in terajoules         Proportion of recycled waste per total kilogram of
		waste produced
	Energy &	Reduction in annual final energy consumption
	mitigation	Reduction in lifecycle energy use
	mugation	Reduction of embodied energy of products and
		services used in the project
		Increase in local renewable energy production
		Combined heat and power generation percentage of
		gross electricity generation
		gross electricity generation

		Alternative Energy Master plan	
		Maximum Hourly Deficit	
		An assessment of the extensiveness of city energy	
		efficiency standards for buildings	
	Materials, water,	Increased efficiency of resources consumption	
	land, Ecosystem	Share of recycled input materials	
		Share of renewable materials	
		Share of renewable materials	
		Life time extension	
		Reduction in water consumption	
		Increase in water re-used	
		Self-sufficiency - Water	
		Increase in compactness	
	Climate resilience	Climate resilience measures	
	Pollution & waste	Decreased emissions of Nitrogen dioxides (NO2)	
		Urban population exposure to air pollution by	
		particulate matter micrograms per m3	
		Decreased emissions of Particulate matter (PM2,5)	
		Reduced exposure to noise pollution	
		Reduction in the amount of solid waste collected	
		Summer smog (Ozon)	
		Fatal chronic lower respiratory diseases per	
		inhabitant	
	Level of	Importance as knowledge centre (top research	
	qualification,	centres, top universities etc.)	
	Education and	Population qualified at levels 5-6 ISCED	
	skills of the	Foreign language skills	
E	population	% of population aged 15-64 with secondary-level	
OPL		education living in Urban Audit	
SMART PEOPLE		% of population aged 15-64 with higher education	
[AR]		living in Urban Audit	
SM		% of inhabitants working in education and in	
		research & development sector	
		Individual level of computer skills	
		Individual level of internet skills	
	Affinity to lifelong	Book loans per resident	
	learning	Participation in life-long-learning in %	

	Social and ethnic		
		Share of foreigners	
	plurality	Share of nationals born abroad	
	Flexibility	Perception of getting a new job	
	Creativity	Share of people working in creative industries	
	Cosmopolitanism	Voters turnout at European elections	
	and open-	Immigration-friendly environment (attitude towards	
	mindedness	immigration)	
		Knowledge about the region/ country	
	Knowledge about	Voters turnout at city elections	
	the region	Participation in voluntary work	
	Cultural facilities	Cinema attendance per inhabitant	
		Museums visits per inhabitant	
		Total book loans and other media per resident	
	Health conditions	Improved access to basic health care services	
		Encouraging a healthy lifestyle	
		Waiting time	
		Life expectancy	
		Hospital beds per inhabitant	
		Doctors per inhabitant	
		Satisfaction with quality of health system	
	Safety	Reduction of traffic accidents	
		Reduction in crime rate	
		Improved cybersecurity	
		Improved data privacy	
		Crime rate	
		Death rate by assault	
		Satisfaction with personal safety	
	Education	Improved/ satisfaction with access to educational	
	facilities	resources/ system	
		Increased environmental awareness	
		Improved digital literacy	
_ ►		Students per inhabitant	
SMART LIVING		Satisfaction with quality of educational system	
LLIV		No. of universities and research centers in the city	
ART		No. of courses entirely downloadable from the	
SM		internet/total no. courses	

		Percentage of professors and researchers involved in international projects and exchange
		Percentage of accessible courses for people with disabilities (PWD)
	Touristic attractivity	Touristic Importance as tourist location (overnights, sights)
		overnight stays in registered accommodation in per year per resident
	Access to (other)	Access to public transport
	services	Quality of public transport
		Improved access to vehicle sharing solutions
		Extending the bike route network
		Access to public amenities
		Access to commercial amenities
		Increase in online government services/ e-
		Government on-line availability (percentage of the
		20 basic services that are fully available online)
		e-Government usage by individuals (percentage
		individuals aged 16-74 who have used the Internet,
		in the last 3 months, for interaction with public
		authorities)
		Proportion of the area in for recreational sports and
		leisure use
		Number of public libraries
		Number of theaters and cinemas
	Diversity and	People reached
	social cohesion	Increased consciousness of citizenship and social
		coherence
		Increased participation of vulnerable groups
		Perception on personal risk of poverty
		Poverty rate
	Quality of housing	Diversity of housing types
	and the built	Connection to the existing cultural heritage
	environment	Design for a sense of place
		Increased access to urban public outdoor recreation space
		Increased access to green space

		Share of housing fulfilling minimal standards
		Average living area per inhabitant
		Satisfaction with personal housing situation
		Green Building Policies
	Quality of life of	Public and community housing
	the community	Homelessness rate
		Rent stress
		Mortgage stress
		Housing construction costs
		Dwelling price to income ratio
		Population change per building approval
		Free time
	Liveability and	Adult obesity rate
	Sustainability	Support in times of crisis
		Suicide rate
		Volunteering
		Office building energy efficiency (New)
		Access to public transport (New)
	Added value city	i-energy
	wide intelligent services	i-transport
	services	i-democracy
		i-government
		i-services
		i-home
	Quality of	Number of enterprises adopting ISO 14000
	industry-based	standards
	services	Proportion of people undertaking industry-based
		training
	Local accessibility	Public transport network per inhabitant
2		Satisfaction with access to public transport
SMART MOBILITY		Satisfaction with quality of public transport
	(Inter-)national	International
T M	accessibility	accessibility
MAR	Availability ICT	City area covered by cable networks (per cent of
SI	infrastructure	total area)
		City area covered by Wi-Fi networks (per cent of
		total area)

		City area covered by xDSL networks (per cent of
		total manufacturing enterprises)
		Computers (per million of population)
		Internet connections (per million of population)
		Broadband connections (per million of population)
		Users of e-gov services (per million of population)
		City enterprises owning a website (per cent of total
		enterprises)
		City enterprises involved in B2B or B2C (per cent
		of total enterprises)
		Number of telephones per household
		(Telephones/person)
		Number of handphones per household
		(Handphones/person)
		Development of cloud platform and application
		Utilization
		Open and Integrated Urban Operating System
		<ul><li>Urban OS</li><li>Geospatial</li></ul>
		Smart Grids
		Ontologies
		Semantic
		Linked APIs
		Cloud City Infrastructure for "real and connected" Life
		Sensors
		Activators
		• WSAN
		• B_WISE
		<ul><li> RFID</li><li> Internet of Things</li></ul>
	Sustainable,	Green mobility share (non-motorized individual
	innovative, and	traffic)
	safe transport	Traffic safety
	system	Use of economical cars
		Peak travel delay
.0	Replicability &	Social compatibility
Propagatio n	scalability	Technical compatibility
Prop		Ease of use for end users of the solution
		Ease of use for professional stakeholders
L		

	Trialability	
	Advantages for end users	
	Advantages for stakeholders	
	Visibility of Results	
	Solution(s) to development issues	
	Market demand	
Factors of success	Changing professional norms	
	Changing societal norms	
	Diffusion to other locations	
	Diffusion to other actors	
	Change in rules and regulations	
	Change in public procurement	
	New forms of financing	
	Smart City project visitors	
	Factors of success	Advantages for end users         Advantages for stakeholders         Visibility of Results         Solution(s) to development issues         Market demand         Factors of success         Changing professional norms         Changing societal norms         Diffusion to other locations         Diffusion to other actors         Change in rules and regulations         Change in public procurement         New forms of financing

# SECTIONIV–BARRIERSTOIMPLEMENTPERFORMANCEMEASUREMENTSYSTEMTOSRILANKAANDRECOMMENDEDSOLUTIONS TO OVERCOME THE BARRIERS

(Please provide recommended solutions for the given barriers in the following table)

BARRIERS SOLUTIONS

	mplementation problems			
	increased cost over benefits			
	Multiple interests of different parties engaged in a Smart			
	City project			
	Limitations and unavailability of technological implications			
	hat cause delays in information and automation issues in			
	he process of Performance Measurement			
	Difficulties in obtaining information including the lack of			
	accessibility for databases			
	Data availability and data management issues			
• F	Privacy issues			
• I	ncreased workload to the individuals in the Smart City			
r	nanagement organisation that intents to measure			
p	performance			
• F	Problems due to the human involvement; for example,			
p	political undue interventions and influences, lack of			
	ntegration and the internal resistance from the parties that			
а	are affected differently from Performance Measurement			
• I	Human barrier due to lack of trust on local expertise and			
C	lislike towards collaboration			
• \	Waste of resources due to lack of control			
• F	Problems with monitoring in real time			
• I	Dynamic nature of measurement			
• F	Prioritizing issues			
• 5	Subjective input			
• 1	Manipulation of results.			
Thank you for your contribution				

### **APPENDIX C – QUESTIONNAIRE**

#### **COVERING LETTER FOR THE QUESTIONNAIRE SURVEY**

.....

Dear Sir/Madam,

#### Research Dissertation – Questionnaire (M.Sc. by Research)

I am a postgraduate student of University of Moratuwa, reading for Master of Science (by Research). I am conducting a research titled "A Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities in Sri Lanka". This research is conducted under the supervision of Dr. Udayangani Kulatunga and Dr Dilum Bandara, Senior Lecturers at the Department of Building Economics and Department of Computer Science and Engineering respectively.

I have selected the proposed Smart City project in Colombo Port City as the case study and initially conducted interviews with the key participants engaged in that project. As the next round I'm conducting a questionnaire survey with the experts who are having a vision for Smart Cities in "Sri Lanka". The objectives of this study and the interview guideline are attached herewith.

I have identified yourself as a potential participant who could provide me valuable information to this research. Therefore, I would like to interview you for **approximately 90 minutes** in this regard. The medium of collecting data will be **note taking and audio recording (with the permission of the interviewee)** in order to collect data more accurately.

I strongly believe that you would support to my research by providing your views related to my research topic. The information collected through this interview will be kept strictly confidential and should be used only for the purpose of the dissertation. Any of your personnel information will not be disclosed within the research.

Thank you. Aravindi Samarakkody Postgraduate Student Department of Building Economics University of Moratuwa. Tel: 077-5557666 Email: aravindilavanya5@gmail.com

#### **QUESTIONNAIRE**

#### SECTION I - GENERAL INTRODUCTION TO THE RESEARCH

#### **Research Title**

"Performance Measurement for the Development of Emerging Smart Cities: The Case of Sri Lanka"

#### **Research Aim**

The aim of this research is to enhance the emerging Smart City development projects in Sri Lanka through an appropriate and holistic Smart City Performance Measurement Systems.

#### **Research Objectives**

Following objectives will be achieved to reach the above research aim.

- 1. To investigate the characteristics of Smart Cities globally and with particular reference to Sri Lanka.
- 2. To investigate the importance of Performance Measurement in Smart City development.
- 3. To synthesise different Performance Measurement Systems for Smart Cities.
- 4. To identify the barriers to implement a Performance Measurement System to Sri Lanka and solutions to overcome the barriers.
- 5. To develop a Performance Measurement System for Smart Cities in Sri Lanka.

#### SECTION II - BACKGROUND INFORMATION OF THE INTERVIEWEE

1. Profession:

.....

- 2. Designation:
  - .....
- 3. How long is your industry experience?

## SECTION III – SUITABILITY OF THE PERFORMANCE MEASURES TO SRI LANKA

**Instructions for the respondents:** 

1) The following System is developed based on the experts' opinions with regards to the suitability of different smartness indicators to the proposed Smart City project in Colombo Port City

2) In this round it is supposed to be generalized to a similar city context in Sri Lanka

**3**) Accordingly, as the first step, you are required to assess the importance of "Themes" (First Column) and provide marks out of 100 for each theme.

4) Under each theme are the subthemes; as your next step you should provide marks for the set of subthemes under each theme, out of 100 marks.

5) Under each subtheme are the indicators; as your final step you should provide marks for the set of indicators under each subtheme, out of 100 marks.

Theme	Marks (Out of 100)	Sub Theme	Marks	Indicators	Marks
		1.20 Economic performance		201.Financial benefit for the stakeholder Total cost savings in euros for a stakeholder per year	
1. SMART ECONOMY		1. 21 Innovation, Innovative spirit, and Innovation performance		202.Involvement of extraordinary professionals The extent to which the project involvedinvolvedprofessionals normally not encountered in these type of projects- Likert scale203.Stimulating environment The extent to which the project	

is part of or stimulates an
* · ·
innovative environment- Likert
204. Quality of open data
The extent to which the quality
of the open data produced by
the project was increased -
number of stars
205.New start-ups- number of
start-ups resulting from the
project
206.Improved interoperability- The
extent to which the project has
increased interoperability
between community
infrastructures           207.Employment rate in:
High Tech and creative
industries; Renewable energy
and energy efficiency systems
Financial intermediation and
business activities;
knowledge-intensive sectors;
Culture and entertainment
industry; Commercial
services; Transport and
communication; Hotels and
restaurants; All companies
(total number)
208.Number of local units
manufacturing high tech &
ICT products
209.Patent applications per inhabitant
210.Number of incubators
211.Number of Science and
Technology Parks
212.Number of Technology
Transfer and Innovation
Centres 213.Exports high-tech services (as
a percentage of total exports)
214.New trade marks
215.Enterprises having internal
Research & Development
Department (as a percentage
of all enterprises)
216.Sales of new-to-market
products (as a percentage of
turnover)
217.Sales of new-to-firm not new-

	to-market products (as a percentage of turnover)
	218. New business models for
	smart growth and quality of
	life
	Living Labs
	Creative class
	Web of Trust
1.22 Entrepreneur	219.Self-employment rate
1. 22 Entrepreneur ship	1 1
	220.New businesses registered
	221.Percentage of projects funded by civil society
1.23 Production	222.Establishment of important
and Productivity	decision-making centres (HQ etc.)
	223.GDP (of smart services) per
	head of city population
1.24 Employment	224.Increased use of local
, Jobs and Skills	workforce
	225.Employment rate
	226.Proportion in part-time employment
1. 25 International embeddedness	227.Air transport of passengers and freight
1. 26 Green	228.Certified companies involved
economy	in the project
	229.Green public procurement-
	Percentage annual
	procurement using
	environmental criteria as
	share of total annual
	procurement of the city administration
	230.CO2 reduction cost efficiency-
	Costs per ton of CO2 saved
	per year
	231.Energy intensity of the
	economy
	-gross inland consumption of
	energy divided by GDP
1.27 Education	232.Public expenditure on R&D
and Research and	-percentage of GDP per head
Development	of city population
	233.Public expenditure on
	education
	-percentage of GDP per head
	of city population
	234.Number of research grants
	funded by international

		projects
	2.14Organization	235.Leadership- The extent to
	composition, process,	which the leadership of the
	leadership, and	project is successful in
	transparency	creating support for the
	The state of the s	project Likert
		236.Balanced project team - The
		extent to which the project
		team included all relevant
		experts and stakeholders from
		the start- Likert
		administration- The extent to
		which the local authority is
		involved in the development of
		the project, other than
		financial, and how many
		departments are contributing-
		Likert
		238.Clear division of
		responsibility- Has the
		responsibility for achieving
		the social and sustainability
ш		targets been clearly assigned
NC N		to (a) specific actor(s) in the
IAI		project? Yes/no
R		239.Continued monitoring and
2. SMART GOVERNANCE		reporting - The extent to which
<u>O</u>		the progress towards project
E E		
<b>L</b> R		goals and compliance with
W		requirements is being
S.		monitored and reported-
0		Likert
		240.Market orientation- The extent
		to which the project was
		planned on the basis of a
		market analysis- Likert
	2.15Community	241.Professional stakeholder
	involvement in	involvement- The extent to
	decision-making	which professional
		stakeholders outside the
		project team have been
		involved in planning and
		execution- Likert
		242.Local community involvement
		in implementation phase-
		Extent to which
		residents/users have been
		involved in the implementation
		process- Likert
		243.Participatory governance %
		Share of population
		participating in online
		platforms
		244.City representatives per
		resident

1         245.1mportance of politics for inhabitants           246.Share of female city representatives           247.Participation by social media           2.16Governance fragmentation         248.Governance orchestration           249.Infrastructure Alignment           250.District Regeneration           2.17Public and social services         251.Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public resources           2.18Transparent governance         254.Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy           2.18Transparent governance         256.Smart Urban Planning           2.19Planning Regulation         257.Smart Identity Branding           2.19Planning Regulation         257.Smart City policy - the extent to which the project has benefitted from a governmental Shart City policy-Likert           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project has benefitted from a governmental Shart City policy of the extent to which were assessed in terms of sustainability           3.17Environmental protection         261.Percentage of new buildings which were assessed in terms of sustainability           3.17Environmental protection         262.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emission reduction strategy           264.Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emission reduction strategy         264.Reduction in the spread of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban spraval and to improve and monitor environmental performance           266.Efficient use of electricity	1		
Contract         Contract State         Contract State           246.5Name         Contained         City           247.Participation by social media         247.Participation by social media           2.16Governance         Contained         Contained           1         Contained         Contained         Contained           249.Infrastructure Alignment         Contained         Contained         Contained           2.17Public         Contained         Contained         Contained         Contained           2.17Public         Contained         Contained         Contained         Contained         Contained           2.18Transparent         Contained         Contained <th></th> <td></td> <td></td>			
3.16Eco-sustainability         247.Participation by social media           3.17Environmental protection         248.Governance orchestration           249.Infrastructure Alignment         250.District Regeneration           251.Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services         251.Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public resources           252.Trading platform for public resources         253.Reduction in waiting time to obtain services           251.Expenditure of bureaucracy governance         254.Satisfaction with fight against corruption           2.19Planning Regulation         255.Smart Urban Planning           257.Smart Identity Branding         257.Smart Identity Branding           258.Smart City policy - the extent to which the project has benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy-Likert           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project           3.16Eco-sustainability         260.Increase in green and blue space due to the project           3.17Environmental protection         261.Percentage of new buildings which were assessed in terms of sustainability           3.17Environmental protection         262.Individual efforts and opinion on protecting nature           263.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban spraval and to improve and monitor environmental performance           264.Reduction in Ifecycle CO2 emission         266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP) </td <th></th> <td></td> <td>246.Share of female city</td>			246.Share of female city
Image: services         249.Infrastructure Alignment           230.District Regeneration         231.Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services           232.Trading platform for public resources         252.Trading platform for public resources           233.Reduction in waiting time to obtain services         253.Reduction with transparency of bureaucracy           255.Satisfaction with transparency governance         255.Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy           2.19Planning         and           Regulation         257.Smart Identity Branding           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project has benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy - the extent to which the project and blue space due to the project           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project           3.16Eco-sustainability         262.Individual efforts and opinion on protecting nature           3.17Environmental protection         263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emissions           263.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban spraval and to improve and monitor environmental performance           264.Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emission reduction strategy           264.Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emission set performance           265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban spraval and to improve and monitor environmental performance			
1         249.Intrastructure Angment           250.District Regeneration         250.District Regeneration           2.17Public and social services         251.Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services           252.Trading platform for public resources         253.Reduction in waiting time to obtain services           2.18Transparent governance         254.Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy           2.19Planning and Regulation         256.Smart Urban Planning           2.19Planning         258.Smart City policy - the extent to which the project has benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy-Likert           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project to which were assessed in terms of sustainability           3.17Environmental protection         261.Percentage of new buildings which were assessed in terms of sustainability           3.17Environmental protection         262.Individual efforts and opinion on protecting nature           263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emissions         263.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           261.Beficient use of electricity (use per GDP)         266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)			248.Governance orchestration
2.17Public and social services         251.Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public and social services           2.17Environmental protection         252.Expenditure of the municipal per resident for public resources           2.18Transparent governance         253.Reduction in waiting time to obtain services           2.18Transparent governance         254.Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy           2.19Planning and Regulation         256.Smart Urban Planning           257.Smart Identity Branding         257.Smart Identity Branding           258.Smart City policy - the extent to which the project has benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy - thas benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy. Likert           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project has benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy. Likert           3.16Eco-sustainability         260.Increased cocystem quality and biodiversity aspects have been taken into account. Likert           3.17Environmental protection         263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emissions           263.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           264.Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emissions           265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)		fragmentation	249.Infrastructure Alignment
Services         per resident for public and social services           252.Trading platform for public resources         253.Reduction in waiting time to obtain services           2.18Transparent governance         254.Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy           255.Satisfaction with fight against corruption         255.Smart Urban Planning           2.19Planning Regulation         256.Smart Urban Planning           257.Smart Identity Branding         258.Smart City policy - the extent to which the project has benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy-Likert           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project 260.Increased ecosystem quality and biodiversity- <i>Extent to which were assessed in terms of sustainability and biodiversity aspects have been taken into account-Likert           3.17Environmental protection         262.Individual efforts and opinion on protecting nature           263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emission reduction strategy         264.Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emission reduction strategy           265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance         265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           3.18Sustainable resource management         266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)  </i>			250.District Regeneration
Social services         Social services           252.Trading platform for public resources         253.Reduction in waiting time to obtain services           253.Reduction with transparency governance         254.Satisfaction with transparency           2.18Transparent         255.Satisfaction with transparency           governance         255.Satisfaction with fight against corruption           2.19Planning         and           Regulation         256.Smart Urban Planning           257.Smart Identity Branding         258.Smart City policy - the extent to which the project has benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy-Likert           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project           3.16Eco-sustainability         260.Increased ecosystem quality and biodiversity extent to which ecosystem quality and biodiversity aspects have been taken into account-Likert           3.17Environmental protection         261.Bercentage of new buildings which were assessed in terms of sustainability           3.17Environmental protection         263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emission reduction strategy           264.Reduction in Iffecycle CO2 emission         265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           265.An aspresent of the comp			
Image: Solution of the second secon			social services
Contract         Obtain services           2.18Transparent governance         254.Satisfaction with transparency of bureaucracy           255.Satisfaction with fight against corruption           2.19Planning Regulation         256.Smart Urban Planning           257.Smart Identity Branding           257.Smart Identity Branding           258.Smart City policy - the extent to which the project has benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy-Likert           3.16Eco-sustainability           259.% Increased ecosystem quality and biodiversity-Extent to which were assessed in terms of sustainability           3.17Environmental protection           3.17Environmental protection           263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emissions           263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emissions           265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           3.18Sustainable resource management         266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)			
Image: space			
255.Satisfaction with fight against corruption           2.19Planning Regulation         and 256.Smart Urban Planning           257.Smart Identity Branding           258.Smart City policy - the extent to which the project has benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy-Likert           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project           3.16Eco-sustainability         250.Increased ecosystem quality and biodiversity- Extent to which ecosystem quality and biodiversity aspects have been taken into account-Likert           3.17Environmental protection         262.Individual efforts and opinion on protecting nature           263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emissions         264.Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emissions           265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           3.18Sustainable resource management         266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)		_	· · ·
2.19Planning Regulation         and 256.Smart Urban Planning           257.Smart Identity Branding           258.Smart City policy - the extent to which the project has benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy-Likert           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project           260.Increased ecosystem quality and biodiversity aspects have been taken into account- Likert           261.Percentage of new buildings which were assessed in terms of sustainability           3.17Environmental protection           262.Individual efforts and opinion on protecting nature           263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emission reduction strategy           264.Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emissions           265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           3.18Sustainable resource management         266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)		governance	255.Satisfaction with fight against
Image: Second			*
Image: constraint of the project has benefitted from a governmental Smart City policy-Likert           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project           260.Increased ecosystem quality and biodiversity- Extent to which ecosystem quality and biodiversity aspects have been taken into account-Likert           261.Percentage of new buildings which were assessed in terms of sustainability           3.17Environmental protection           263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emission reduction strategy           264.Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emission set of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           3.18Sustainable resource management         266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)		Regulation	257.Smart Identity Branding
Description         policy-Likert           3.16Eco-sustainability         259.% Increase in green and blue space due to the project           260.Increased ecosystem quality and biodiversity-Extent to which ecosystem quality and biodiversity aspects have been taken into account-Likert           261.Percentage of new buildings which were assessed in terms of sustainability           3.17Environmental protection         262.Individual efforts and opinion on protecting nature           263.An assessment of the ambitiosness of CO2 emissions         264.Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emissions           265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           3.18Sustainable resource management         266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)			to which the project has benefitted from a
3.17Environmental protection         262.Individual efforts and opinion on protecting nature           263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emissions         263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emissions           264.Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emissions         265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance           3.18Sustainable resource management         266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)			÷
Image: constraint of the constraint		3.16Eco-sustainability	•
Interview       taken into account- Likert         261.Percentage of new buildings which were assessed in terms of sustainability         3.17Environmental protection         263.An assessment of the ambitiousness of CO2 emission reduction strategy         264.Reduction in lifecycle CO2 emissions         265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance         3.18Sustainable resource management       266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)			and biodiversity- <i>Extent to</i> which ecosystem quality and
Which were assessed in terms of sustainability         3.17Environmental protection       262.Individual efforts and opinion on protecting nature         263.An       assessment         264.Reduction in lifecycle       CO2 emissions         265.An       assessment         3.18Sustainable       resource         3.18Sustainable       resource         266.Efficient       use of electricity (use per GDP)			
265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance         3.18Sustainable resource management       266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)	IN		which were assessed in terms
265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance         3.18Sustainable resource management       266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)	ONME		262.Individual efforts and opinion
265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance         3.18Sustainable resource management       266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)	NVIRC	Protection	263.An assessment of the
265.An assessment of the comprehensiveness of policies to contain urban sprawl and to improve and monitor environmental performance         3.18Sustainable resource management       266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)	SMARTE		
3.18Sustainable resource management       266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)			
3.18Sustainable resource management     266.Efficient use of electricity (use per GDP)			comprehensiveness of policies
and a second			-
management per GDP)			environmental performance
			267. The total percentage of the
working population traveling to work on public transport, by			

	1	hierels and her fast
		bicycle and by foot
		268.An assessment of the
		extensiveness of efforts to
		increase the use of cleaner
		transport
		269.Percentage of citizens engaged
		in environmental and
		sustainability-oriented activity
		270.Proportion of recycled waste
		per total kilogram of waste
		produced
	3.19Energy & mitigation	271.Reduction in annual final
		energy consumption
		272.Reduction in lifecycle energy
		use
		273.Reduction of embodied energy
		of products and services used
		in the project
		274.Increase in local renewable
		energy production
		275.Combined heat and power
		generation percentage of gross
		electricity generation
		276.Alternative Energy Master
		plan
		277.Maximum Hourly Deficit
		278.An assessment of the
		extensiveness of city energy
		efficiency standards for
		buildings
	3.20Materials, water,	279.Increased efficiency of
	<i>land</i> , Ecosystem	resources consumption
	iunu, Leosystem	280.Share of recycled and
		renewable input materials
		281.Life time extension- <i>The extent</i>
		to which measures were taken
		to prolong the service lifetime
		of products - Likert
		282.Reduction in water
		consumption
		283.Increase in water re-used
		284.Increase in compactness
	2.2101/101/101	
	3.21Climate resilience	285.Climate resilience measures-
		The extent to which adaptation
		options have been considered
		in the project
	3.22Pollution & waste	286.Decreased emissions of
		Nitrogen dioxides (NO2) and
		Particulate matter (PM2,5)
		287.Reduced exposure to noise
		pollution
		288.Reduction in the amount of
		solid waste collected
I I	I	

		289.Summer smog (Ozon)
		290.Fatal chronic lower respiratory diseases per inhabitant
	4.14 Level of qualification, Education and skills of the population	291.Importance as knowledge centres (top research centres, top universities etc.) 292.Population qualified at levels 5-6 ISCED
		293.Foreign language skills         294.% of population aged 15-64         with above secondary-level         education and above living in         Urban Audit         295.% of inhabitants working in         education and in research &         development sector         296.Individual level of computer         skills         297.Individual level of internet         skills
SMART PEOPLE	4.15 Affinity to lifelong learning	298.Book loans per resident299.Participation in life-long- learning in %300.Participation in language
	4.16 Social and ethnic plurality	courses       301.Share of foreigners       302.Share of nationals born abroad
	4.17 Flexibility	303.Perception of getting a new job         304.Participation in voluntary work         305.Increased use of cashless transactions
	4.18     Creativity       4.19     Cosmopolita	transactions       306.Share of people working in creative industries       307.Voters turnout at elections
	nism and open- mindedness	308.Immigration-friendly environment (attitude towards immigration) 309.Knowledge about the region/
<u></u>	5.24 Health conditions	country         310.Improved access to basic health care services- The extent to which the project has increased accessibility to basic health care         311.Encouraging a healthy
SMART LIVING		lifestyle         312.Waiting time (reduction of queues)         313.Life expectancy         314.Hospital beds per inhabitant

	315.Doctors per inhabitant
	-
	316.Satisfaction with quality of health system
5.25 Safety	317.Reduction of traffic accidents
	318.Reduction in crime rate
	319.Improved cybersecurity
	320.Improved data privacy
	321.Satisfaction with personal safety
5.26 Education facilities	322.Improved access to educational resources/ system
	323.Increased environmental awareness
	324.Improved digital literacy
	325.Satisfaction with quality of educational system
	326.No. of courses entirely downloadable from the
	internet/total no. courses
	327.Percentage of professors and researchers involved in
	international projects and
	exchange
	328.Percentage of accessible
	courses for people with disabilities (PWD)
5.27 Touristic	329. Touristic Importance as tourist
attractivity	location (overnights, sights) - overnight stays in registered
	accommodation in per year per resident
5.28 Access to	330.Access to public transport
(other) services	331.Quality of public transport
	332.Improved access to vehicle sharing solutions
	333.Extending the bike route network
	334.Decreased travel time
	335.Provision for autonomous driving
	336.Access to public amenities
	337.Access to commercial amenities
	338.Increase in online government
	services/ e-Government on-
	line availability (percentage of
	the 20 basic services that are fully available online)
	339.e-Government usage by
	individuals (percentage
	individuals aged 16-74 who

·		
		have used the Internet, in the
		last 3 months, for interaction
		with public authorities)
		340.Proportion of the area in for
		recreational sports and leisure
		use
	5.29 Diversity	341.People reached ( <i>Percentage of</i>
	and social cohesion	
	and social conesion	people in the target group that
		have been reached and/or are
		activated by 5 services in the
		project)
		342.Increased consciousness of
		citizenship and social
		coherence
		343.Increased participation of
		vulnerable groups
	5.30 Quality of	344.Diversity of housing types
	housing and the built	
	environment	345.Design for a sense of place
		346.Increased access to urban
		L L
		space
		347.Increased access to green
		space
		348.Satisfaction with personal
		housing situation
		349. Green Building Policies
	5.31 Quality of	350.Public and community
		5
	life of the community	housing
		351.Dwelling price to income ratio
		352.Free time
	7.00 X 1.11	
	5.32 Liveability and Sustainability	353.Adult obesity rate
		354.Support in times of crisis
		355.Suicide rate
		356.Office building energy
		efficiency
	5.33 Added value	357.i-energy
	city wide intelligent	358.i-transport
	services	359.i-democracy
		360.i-government
		361.i-services
		362.i-home
	5.34 Quality of	363.Number of enterprises
	industry-based	adopting ISO 14000 standards
	services	364.Proportion of people
		undertaking industry-based
		training
s s	6.8 (Inter-)national	365.Satisfaction with international
<u>s</u> s	6.8 (Inter-)national accessibility	365.Satisfaction with international accessibility

60 Avoilability	ICT	366 City area acyarad by ashla	
6.9 Availability infrastructure	ICT	366.City area covered by cable networks (per cent of total	
initasti detute		area)	
		367.City area covered by Wi-Fi	
		networks (per cent of total	
		area)	
		368.City area covered by xDSL	
		networks (per cent of total	
		manufacturing enterprises)	
		369.Computers (per million of	
		population)	
		370.Internet connections (per	
		million of population)	
		371.Broadband connections (per	
		million of population)	
		372. Users of e-gov services (per	
		million of population)	
		373.City enterprises owning a website (per cent of total	
		enterprises)	
		374.City enterprises involved in	
		B2B or B2C (per cent of total	
		enterprises)	
		375.Number of	
		telephones/handphone per	
		household (Telephones or	
		handphone /person)	
		376. Availability of social credit	
		377.Development of cloud	
		platform and application	
		Utilization	
		378. Open and Integrated Urban	
		Operating System	
		Geospatial	
		Smart Grids	
		Ontologies	
		Semantic	
		Linked APIs	
		Cloud	
		379.City Infrastructure for "real	
		and connected" Life	
		Sensors	
		Activators	
		WSAN	
		B_WISE	
		RFID	
		Internet of Things	
6.10Sustainable,		380.Green mobility share (non-	
innovative, and	safe	motorized individual traffic)	
transport system		381.Use of economical cars	
		382.Peak travel delay	
		-	

Propagation	7.5 Replicability & scalability	383.Social compatibility
		384. Technical compatibility
		385.Ease of use for end users of the solution
		386.Ease of use for professional stakeholders
		387.Trialability
		388.Advantages for end users
		389.Advantages for stakeholders
		390. Visibility of Results
		391.Solution(s) to development issues
		392.Market demand
	7.6 Factors of success	393.Changing professional norms
		394.Changing societal norms
		395.Diffusion to other locations
		396.Diffusion to other actors
		397.Change in rules and regulations
		398.Change in public procurement
		399.New forms of financing
		400.Smart City project visitors

-Thank you very much for your contribution-